Ibāḍism
East of Mesopotamia

Early Islamic Iran, Central Asia and India

ABDULRAHMAN AL-SALIMI
IBĀḌISM EAST OF MESOPOTAMIA
EARLY ISLAMIC IRAN, CENTRAL ASIA AND INDIA
ABDULRAHMAN AL-SALIMI

IBĀḌISM EAST OF MESOPOTAMIA

EARLY ISLAMIC IRAN, CENTRAL ASIA AND INDIA

BEIRUT 2016

IN KOMMISSION BEI

KLAUS SCHWARZ VERLAG • BERLIN
This work is dedicated to my father Sulayman (1930-2001)
It is the hope of every scholar that a piece of written work will aid colleagues, students and general readers in the discovery of new and deeper understandings in the field. Each published work is like a strand. Thousands of strands of research form a collective web of knowledge. None of us weaves his strand into the web alone. This book was made possible through the support of many friends and colleagues. Their guidance, insights, hours of conversation about content, research assistance, editing work and sustaining friendships have enabled me to complete this presentation of “Ibāḍism east of Mesopotamia: Early Islamic Iran, Central Asia and India”. I owe the deepest gratitude and appreciation especially to His Excellency Shaykh Abd Allah b. Muhammad al-Salimi. Also I extend my thanks to Abd Allah S. al-Salimi and all my brothers, Dawud, Hasan, Husayn, Abd Allah, Muhammad, Hamza, Ahmad and Hamad. And to my close colleagues with whom I am privileged to work: Heinz Gaube (University of Tübingen), Ridwan al-Sayyid (Lebanese University), Wadad Kadi (University of Chicago), Vanessa De Gifis (University of Chicago), Mandana Limbert (CUNY/Queens College), Paul Starkey (Durham University), Wilferd Madelung (University of Oxford), Josef van Ess (University of Tübingen), Patricia Crone (IAS Princeton), Fritz Zimmermann (University of Oxford), Michael Jansen (University of Aachen), Michael Cook (Princeton University), Sabine Schmidtke (Institute for Advanced Study, Princeton), Muhammad El-Cheikh (University of Hassan II), Reinhard Eisener (Berlin). These friends have all made valuable contributions to this volume.

A very special thank you is due also to Stefan Leder for including this volume in the Bibliotheca Islamica series. Finally, I would like to acknowledge Astrid Meier, Syrinx von Hees, Monique Bellan and Caroline Kinj at the Orient-Institut Beirut for their kindness and patience in bringing this book to print.
TABLE OF CONTENTS

TABLE OF CONTENTS .......................................................... 7

INTRODUCTION ................................................................. 9

مدخل .................................................................................. 17

SYMBOLS AND ABBREVIATIONS ........................................... 27

CHAPTER ONE

THE SĪRAH TO THE PEOPLE OF KHWĀRAZM ............................ 29
  1.1 Introduction .................................................................. 29
  1.2 Commentary ............................................................... 30
  1.3 The Text ....................................................................... 31
  1.4 Translation .................................................................... 37

CHAPTER TWO

THE SĪRAH TO THE PEOPLE OF KHURĀSĀN ......................... 41
  2.1 Introduction .................................................................. 41
  2.2 Commentary ............................................................... 42
  2.3 The Text ....................................................................... 46
  2.4 Translation .................................................................... 65

CHAPTER THREE

THE SĪRAH OF IMAM RĀSHID B. SAĪD TO THE PEOPLE OF MANṢŪRAH .. 83
  3.1 Introduction .................................................................. 83
  3.2 Commentary ............................................................... 83
  3.3 The Text ....................................................................... 92
  3.4 Translation .................................................................... 116
# Table of Contents

## CHAPTER FOUR
**Ibādism in Early Islamic Iran, Central Asia and India**  
4.1 Siyar and Ibāḍī History in the East .......................... 139  
4.2 The historical background of the Muḥakkimah ....................... 141  
4.3 The schisms among the Muḥakkimah and the settlements in the East... 145  
4.4 Other aspects of the relationship between Ibāḍism and the East .......... 149  
4.5 The Ibāḍī Settlements in the East .................................... 158

## CHAPTER FIVE
**Rereading the Siyar on Oman’s Socio-Political History**  
5.1 The Socio-Political Situation in Oman during the Period of the Siyar  
5.2 Chronology of Imams in Oman ........................................... 173

## SUMMARY AND CONCLUSION .................................................. 177
## BIBLIOGRAPHY ..................................................................... 183
## INDICES ............................................................................. 197

الكتّابات ................................................................. 205
INTRODUCTION

During the last three decades, a number of valuable Ibāḍī and Omani texts, which had previously been unavailable, have come to light. The discovery of these texts has changed our views on classical Islamic history as well as on Omani history. They provide us with a picture of the intellectual world of Oman and Ibāḍism that differs from our previous views, which were based almost entirely on hostile sources. From this perspective, the present work is an attempt to study the literature of these Omani *siyar*. So far, few and limited studies have shown an interest in this field, despite the fact that this literature is a reflection of the socio-political history of Oman as well as the style of Omani and Eastern Ibāḍī writers.

This work has been written with two types of readers in mind: readers with a general interest in Islamic and Arabic classical literature, and specialists in Oman and Ibāḍism. It covers Omani relations with Central Asia in the 10th and 11th centuries and involves textual analysis and historical contextualization. The present study can be seen as a direct result of my research in the Sālimī Library and is essentially motivated by my discovery of three *siyar* manuscripts that had not been edited or published. These are:

1. the *sīrah* of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd al-Yahmadī to the people of Manṣūrah,
2. the *sīrah* to the people of Khwārazm, and
3. the *sīrah* to the people of Khurāsān.

These three *siyar* were written in the 4th/10th and 5th/11th centuries, and they provided new intellectual theories for the spread of Ibāḍī thought in Asia. This was the period in which the Omanis were able to restore their imamate after Oman had been under the hegemony of the ʿAbbasids, Carmathians and Buyids. Hence, this study begins with general and basic questions regarding the authenticity of these texts, with the aim of exploring the context to which these texts refer, which
might in some way prove the existence of Ibāḍī communities in Central Asia. The available classical Arabic geographical works, although fragmentary, provide interesting details regarding Ibāḍī toponyms in Asia. This information can add to recent studies by Madelung and van Ess, which cover a number of Ibāḍī locations in the East.

Much of the methodology of this study is based on a comparative method aimed at understanding the development of Islamic thought. Recently, there has been a tendency towards analysing classical Islamic texts as belonging to groups, rather than individuals. This approach has been embraced in such works as Das Kitāb al-irğā’ des Hasan b. al-Hanafiyya and Anfänge muslimischer Theologie by J. van Ess and Early Muslim Dogma by M. Cook. These two scholars have adopted similar criteria and strategies that are focused on examining classical Islamic texts through the comparison with other contemporary texts. Likewise P. Cuperly has examined several early Ibāḍī creeds in his work Introduction à l'étude de l'Ibadisme et de sa théologie, in order to demonstrate the development of Ibāḍī theology in North Africa and Oman. Cuperly’s work studied the comparative theological issues in classical Islam that have been recorded by the early Ibāḍī epistles by presenting the main cases which were investigated among Ibāḍī theologians in both regions. A more recent work, The Epistle of Sālim b. Dhakwān by P. Crone and F. Zimmermann, selects one text as the object of study, using other texts to interpret it. They have chosen a different method, namely the comprehensive analysis of classical Islamic texts. Besides these works, J. C. Wilkinson produced two articles examining Omani texts concerning the Ibāḍī and Omani rules in East Africa in the 6th/12th century. Wilkinson's works may be considered as a first attempt of its kind to understand Omani history through the study of Omani texts. His perspective provides a general framework for dealing with historical analysis rather than focusing on the study of the texts themselves.

These different approaches to classical Arabic texts provide a characteristic framework and raise interesting questions regarding the interpretation of these texts. The approach to the siyar texts as they relate to the development of Islamic thought has influenced which of the testimonies can best be used to analyse the distribution of the Ibāḍī communities in Asia. Moreover, the development of the Ibāḍī movement has been reconstructed from these sources.
Chapters 1 to 3 provide three examples of Ibaḍī texts from Asia (Khwārazm, Khurāsān and Manṣūrah), making these texts available for further historical investigations rather than treating them as isolated epistles. Each of these three chapters includes an edited version and a translation of the respective epistle. The subsequent analysis of the text aims to provide a more detailed picture of how Ibaḍī thought spread in Asia through the examination of the expanding role of the second imamate of Oman. This is followed by a general discussion of the structure, content, terminology and sources of the epistle in question, including an analysis of internal values and literary parallels, in an attempt to determine the values governing it. In examining the three texts, I focus on such textual elements as divisions within the texts, formulae, and their incorporation of other sources (e.g. Qur’ān, ḥadīth, and poetry). These observations in turn raise general questions about the authenticity of the material in question and its significance for the development of Ibaḍī thought. This may appeal to those who are interested in Omani history and the formation of early religious trends in Iran.

Chapters 4 & 5 outline diachronic and synchronic discussions regarding the development of Ibaḍī thought in Iran and the social politics of Oman during the 10th and 11th centuries. I am concerned with both the historical and the intellectual dimensions of Ibaḍī activity. With regard to the former, I investigate the Ibaḍī and Omani historical contacts with other regions in Asia, examining the extent of Omani imams’ and religious scholars’ contacts with other areas outside Iran. I emphasize Oman’s centrality in influencing some of the events in the historical period of the texts. With regard to the latter dimension, which involves the doctrinal aspect of the texts, I trace the expansion of Ibaḍī thought throughout Asia. In addition, I study the intellectual debates occurring in the siyar and the Omani socio-political context in which such debates developed.

To the best of my knowledge, no previous study has touched on this significant topic. The limited amount of research materials is only one of the numerous challenges I had to rise to in the course of my research and completion of this work. With this edition of three siyar I hope to shed some light on this neglected area of research on Omani history and Ibaḍī doctrine.
The following manuscripts and books contain the three epistles:

1 = 0 The manuscript belongs to the Sālimī Library in Bidiyyah. It is part of the *K. al-Taqyīd*. The book was compiled by Abū Muhammad b. Barakah as a record of the notes that he had taken during sessions with his teachers, Imam Saʿīd b. ‘Abd Allāh (d. 328/939) and Abū Mālik Ghassān b. Muḥammad b. al-Khaḍar. This manuscript is important, because it includes the earliest Ibāḍī opinions and citations from works written in Basra, some of which are considered as lost, such as *K. Abī Nūḥ Šāliḥ b. al-Dahhān*, *K. ‘Abd al-Malik b. Abī Ṣufrah*, and *K. Abī al-Ḥurr*. The title page carries the name of the owner of the manuscript, ‘Abd Allāh b. ʿUmar b. Ziyād b. Aḥmad, who states that he bought the book in the form of loose pages for two thousand four hundred dinars, on the last Sunday of Muḥarram 963/December 1555. However, there is a problem concerning the copyist’s date. On the antepenultimate page the copyist’s date is recorded as 7 Jumādā I 963 (18 March 1556) in the city of Buhlā. The bulk of the manuscript’s text is written in the same clear and fluid *naskh* hand throughout and consists of 433 pages. However, there are many interpolations in the manuscript. For example, the handwriting is different from page 316 to the end of the book, and there are also additions of many independent monographs attributed to different authors. In addition to this, the number of lines per page varies from page 316 onward. Up to page 315 there are 22 lines per page; from page 316 onward the number of lines ranges from 21 to 26. The manuscript folio size is 28.5 x 19 cm.

The *sīrah* to the people of Khurāsān can be found on pages 88 to 98, and the *sīrah* to the people of Khwārazm on pages 135 to 136. The original was in fact completed on Wednesday, 5 Rajab 625 (10 June 1228), and the copyist was ‘Abd Allāh b. ʿUmar b. Ziyād b. Aḥmad b. Rāshid b. ʿUmar, apparently the same man who bought *K. al-Taqyīd*.

Another problem with this manuscript is that there are many lacunae on the pages. Furthermore, most of the folios are corroded. No other copies of this manuscript have been found, possibly because this particular copy was so expensive that the purchaser sought to prevent his original from being copied subsequently by other copyists. This manuscript is not mentioned in the standard Ibāḍī/Omani works, and it

---

(1) This work is also listed among the early Ibāḍī works by al-Barrādī, *al-Jawāhir al-muntaqār*, 218.
Introduction

may have been neglected, as have many other similar works. Accordingly, neither Omani historical nor jurisprudential sources mention these two sīrahs. They are neither included in the collection of al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt nor in other collections of Omani siyar. No attempt has previously been made to publish or edit either of them.

The Sālimī Library contains the only original manuscript. It is easier to read than to understand, and in many instances one can tell what the letters are, or might be, but sometimes they do not make sense. For this reason, the edited manuscript quotes other Ibāḍī epistles for elucidation, including the sīrah of Abū Ayyūb Wāʾil b. Ayyūb. The latter text was used in the editing of Nasab al-islām, the second part of the epistle being used as a reference. The first copy of the sīrah of Abū Ayyūb is used in al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt,¹ and the second copy is used in the Nizwā copy.² However, neither of them was used or considered as the original text; rather, they were utilized for purposes of correction and comparison to complete the original text, i.e. the al-Sālimī copy. A number of gaps leave the final text patchy in some places; this is inevitable due to the insufficiency of the original text. As a result, I have occasionally interpolated in order to clarify the text and convey a meaning that is as accurate as possible. I have also punctuated and vocalized the text, which originally lacks vocalization (tashkīl). I have broken the text into paragraphs, to enable the reader to follow the flow of the text more easily.

2 = S is located in the Sālimī Library in Bidiyah amongst a collection of Omani siyar. Unfortunately, the front of the book is torn and some of the leaves are missing. The manuscript was completed on Wednesday night 9 Ṣafar 1122/8 April 1710, in the castle of Ibrā [3] at the time of Imam Sayf b. Sulṭān al-Ya’rubī (1692-1711 AD).³ The copyist, Sālim b. Khamīs b. Sālim b. Nijād al-Maḥīlawī, says at the end of the book: “I wrote this book by myself.” Each page has 26 lines. The manuscript is

¹ Al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt, 2: 46-61. This is the sīrah by Wāʾil b. Ayyūb, Nasab al-islām. The editor of the book said that she used the copy owned by the Ministry of National Heritage and Culture, and that this copy was completed on Thursday 7 Jumādā I 1009/13 November 1600.

² See the detailed analysis of the manuscript in chapter 2. The sīrah is by Wāʾil b. Ayyūb and the topic is Nasab al-islām. The sīrah is on eight pages in the first volume (182-189).

³ Ibrā is a district in Eastern Oman.

part of a volume of 653 pages and includes 75 siyar; with an index of the siyar at the beginning. The book was written in naskhī script. The sīrah of Manṣūrah is number 44 in this collection and comprises ten pages (375-384). The title of the sīrah is written in red ink and states: “This is the revelatory sīrah of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd to the people of Manṣūrah in the Sind region.” The main body of the text is written in black ink. The difficulty with this copy is that sometimes letters are written without their dots and there are occasional spelling errors.

3 = N The Nizwā copy, made by Aḥmad b. Nāṣir al-Sayfī in Nizwā is in private possession. It is part of a collection of Omani siyar entitled Kitāb al-siyar al-ibādiyyah. The book was completed on Wednesday, 29 Dhū al-Qa’dah 1114 (15 April 1703) and written in naskhī script. Black ink is used throughout. No mention is made of the copyist nor of the location where the book was written. The manuscript is bound in two volumes. The first volume includes 47 siyar and the second 29 siyar. Each volume contains an index of the complete collection. The sīrah of Manṣūrah is the 22nd sīrah in the second volume. This sīrah comprises 12 pages and each page, sized 9x29 cm, has 27 lines.

4 = C The copy belongs to the Ministry of National Heritage and Culture in Muscat. The collection comprises three volumes and the heading reads: “This is the book of siyar of the Maḥbūbī(1) Ibāḍīs.” The first volume contains 195 pages, the second volume 191 pages and the third 186 pages. The sīrah of Manṣūrah is in the third volume, on pages 85 to 98. The copy was written in naskhī script in black ink. There are 24 lines on each page. The copy was finished on a Sunday in Muḥarram 1299 (December 1881). The copyist’s name is ᴴᵃᵐᵃᵈ b. ʿAˡⁱ b. ᴴᵘˢᵃˡᵃˡ mᵉ ʳ-Kʰᵃᵐⁱˢʰⁱ, and on the final page he says: “Some of his student friends were taught by Muḥammad b. Sulayyīm al-Ghāribī.” The copy was made for Sultan Barghash b. Saʿīd b. Sulṭān al-Būṣaʿīḍī, the sultan of Zanzibar. It is clearer than the other manuscripts, but it contains many incorrect words, which were either taken over from the original manuscript or are to be attributed to the copyist.

5 = B Kitāb Bayān al-sharʿ by Abū ʿAbd Allāh Muḥammad b. Ibrāhīm al-Kīndī (d. 508/1114); this work consists of 72 volumes and was published by the Ministry of National Heritage and Culture (Muscat 1986-1993).(2)

---

(1) This refers to Maḥbūb b. al-Ruḥayl, who was the last Ibāḍī leader in Basra.
(2) For more details, see Custers, al-Ibāḍiyyah: A Bibliography, 1: 230-231.
6 = P *Kitāb al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt*; a collection of Ibāḍī epistles edited by Sayyida Kāshīf Ismā‘īl, published in two volumes in 1984 by the Ministry of Heritage and Culture, Muscat. According to the editor, the edition is based on Ms. 1854, no. 2, in the manuscript library of the Ministry of National Heritage and Culture, written on 7 of Jumādā I 1009 (13 November 1600).\(^{(1)}\)

I have fully punctuated and vocalized the texts; the originals lack vocalization almost throughout. Other sources have been used to help in the editing process, especially the Qur’ān.

---

\(^{(1)}\) *Al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt*, 1: 17.
دخل

خلال العقود الثلاثة الأخيرة أبصرت النور مجموعة قيّمة من النصوص العُمانية (وهي السير العمانية) والتي لم تكن في المتناول. والحال أنّ اكتشاف هذه النصوص عمل على تغيير وجهة نظرنا إلى التاريخ الإسلامي الكلاسيكي، وإلى التاريخ العُماني أيضًا؛ إذ وفّرت لنا هذه النصوص المكتشفة صورة عن العالم الفكري لعمان والإباضية على وجه الخصوص، تعطينا نظرة مختلفة تُغيّر وجهات النظر السابقة، والتي كانت تستند في بقائها غالبًا إلى مصادر مُعادية. ومن هذا المنظور، فإنّ هذا العمل هو محاولة لدراسة أدبيّات السير العمانية. وإلى حدّ الآن، فإن الدراسات والبحوث التي أبدت اهتمامًا بهذا الحقل قليلة ومحدودة، وذلك على الرغم من واقع أن هذه الدراسات إنها هي الاعتكاس للتاريخ الاجتماعي والسياسي لعمان، كما أنها تعبر عن أساليب الكتابة للعمانيين والإباضيين بالمشرق (في العصور الأوّل لبداية الكتابات الإسلامية).

إن هذا النوع من الكتابات والأعمال قد حظى باهتمام نوعين من القراء، هما: ذو الاهتمام العام بالأدب الإسلامي والعربية الكلاسيكية، والمختصون بالتاريخ العُماني بعامة والإباضي على وجه الخصوص. وتغطي هذه الكتابات والأعمال حقبة القرنين العاشر والمهدى عشر الميلاديين في صلات عمان بآسيا الوسطى، كما يفيد التحليل النصي والتنسيق التاريخي [أي وضع النصوص في سياقها]. ويمكن النظر إلى هذه الدراسة على أنها الثمرة الأساسية للبحث، في مخطوط السير العمانية الموجود في مكتبة السالمي، وقد توجّهها اكتشافا لسلاسل سير مخطوطة لم يتمّ نشرها أو تحقيقها قبل ذلك. وهي على النحو التالي:
1- سيرة الإمام راشد بن سعيد البحمدي لأهل المنصورة بالسند.
2- سيرة لأهل خوارزم.
3- سيرة لأهل خراسان.

والحال أن هذه السير الثلاث قد كُتبت في القرنين الرابع والخامس الهجريين/العاشر والحادي عشر الميلاديين، وهي تقدم لنا نظريات فكرية جديدة عن انتشار الفكر الإباضي بآسيا. فقد كانت تلك الحقبة التي استطاع فيها العُمانيون إعادة إمانتهم بعد أن رزحوا لعقود تحت هيمنة العباسيين والقرامطنة والبوهيين. وبالطبع، فإن هذه الدراسة تبدأ بالأمثلة العامة والأساسية المتعلقة بمدى صحة نسبة النصوص، وذلك بغض استكشاف السياق الذي تجل إليه هذه النصوص، والنتائج التي تؤدي إليه، أو بمعنى من المعاني، إثبات وجود الجماعات الإباضية آسيا الوسطى. ومع أن الأعمال الجغرافية العربية الكلاسيكية المتوافرة على الرغم من تشتتها لا زالت تمدنا بتفاصيل مهمة عن أماكن وجود الإباضية آسيا؛ فإن من شأن هذه الاكتشافات الجديدة أن تضيف شيئًا جديدًا إلى الدراسات التي قام بها سابقا كل من ويلفرد مادلونغ، ويوسف فان إس، وباتريشيا كرون، وفورتزر زيرمان، والتي تغطي عددًا من مواطن استيطان الإباضية بالشرق.

والحال أن جزءًا كبيرًا من منهجية هذه الدراسة يقوم على منهج مقارن يسعى إلى فهم تطور الفكر الإسلامي، وذلك أنه قد يبرز مؤثرًا نزوعًا إلى تحليل النصوص الإسلامية الكلاسيكية بوضعها في إطار فكري وتأريخي موحده يرتبط عددًا من النصوص، بجاوزًا لتحليلها المفرد. وقد تم اعتراض هذه المقارنة في أعمال مثل كتاب "الإجراه" للحسن بن الحكيم، لفان إس، "العقيدة الإسلامية المبكرة" من تأليف مايكل كوك. والواقع أن هذه الدراسات تبنيها المعايير والاستراتيجيات نفسها التي تركز على نقد النصوص الإسلامية الكلاسيكية عبر
مقارنتها بنصوص أخرى معاصرة لها. وكذلك بالمثل أنجز بيير كنوبرلي علميًا رائعًا "مقدمة لعلم الكلام الإباضي"، وذلك بدراسة عدة نصوص، والتي تعزى في المرحلة الإسلامية الكلاسيكية بـ "العقيدة"، وقد انتهى عدة نصوص من عمان وشمال أفريقيا، وكذلك من مراحل زمنية مختلفة لإبراز تطور العقيدة الإباضية حتى القرن 8/11. وأحدث تلك الدراسات: دراسة كرون وزيرمان، الموسيمة بـ "سيرة سالم بن ذكوان"، والتي عمدت إلى انتقاء نص على أنه موضوع الدراسة، واستعمال نصوص أخرى قصد تأويله. فقد اختار مؤلفاهما منهجاً معايراً، هو منهج التحليل الشمولي للنصوص الإسلامية الكلاسيكية. وفضلاً عن هذه الأعمال، كتب جون ويلكنسون مقالتين يحلّل فيها النصوص العُمانية الدائرة على الحكم الإباضي والعماني لشرق أفريقيا خلال القرن السادس الهجري/الثاني عشر الميلادي. والحال أنه ينبغي عدُّ أعمال ويلكنسون المحاكمة الأولى من هذا النوع لفهم التاريخ العُمانى من خلال دراسة النصوص العُمانية، وينبغي أن ندرك أن منظوره بمثمله بإطار عام للتعامل مع التحليل التاريخي أكثر من التركيز على دراسة النصوص نفسها. وبدلاً من هذه المقاربات المتباينة للنصوص العربية الكلاسيكية من شأنها أن تتميّزا بإطار فُيّوجي، وأن تُولِّد أسئلة مهمة في تأويل هذه النصوص.

إن مقاربة نصوص السِّير - من حيث إذا تنازل بتطور الفكر الإسلامي - هي عمل كان له أثر في معرفة أية شهادات يمكن استعمالها الاحتياجات الإسلامية. أكثر من هذا، لقد تمّت إعادة بناء تطور الحركة الإباضية بدءًا من هذه المصادر. وهكذا، فإن السِّير الثلاث الأولى تمثّلنا بِأمثلة ثلاثية عن نصوص في وجود الإباضيين بآسيا (خوارزم وخراسان والمنصورة)، فاتحة هذه النصوص دراسات من أجل استقصاءات تاريخية مستقبلية، ويتَمّ التعامل معها أكثر مما لو كانت...
رسائل مزعولة. وكل سيرة من هذه السير تتضمن نسخة محققة للنص وتترجم لها إلى اللغة الإنجليزية، والتحليل الذي يعقب الرسالة يهدف إلى توفير صورة أولى عن كيفية انتشار الفكر الإباضي بآسيا، وذلك من خلال فحص النصوص الواسع لإمامة عُمان الثانية. وتعقب هذا كله مناقشة عامة لبيئة الرسالة المعنوية ومحتواها واصطلاحاتها ومصدرها. كما يتضمن العمل أيضًا تحليلًا لقيمها الداخلية ومواءمات أسلوبية مع غيرها، وذلك كله في محاولة لمتاحة تحديد القيم التي تحكمها. وأثناء فحص النصوص الثلاثة قُم كل من خلال فحص الفكر الإباضي، والترجمة، والشاعر. والمقابل، اتبنت من هذه الملاحظات تساؤلات عامة تتعلق بمدى صحة المواد المعنية، ودلائلها بالقياس على تطور الفكر الإباضي. وهذا من شأنه أن يثير التساؤلات لأولئك الذين يهتمون بالتاريخ العماني وبتكملة النزعات الدينية المبكرة في إيران.

أما الفصلان اللاحقان (الرابع والخامس)، فإنهما يقدمان مناقشات تزامنية وتتابعية حول تطور الفكر الإباضي في إيران وأوساط آسيا وحول السياسة الاجتماعية لعُمان خلال القرنين العاشر والحادي عشر الميلاديين. وقد انتصب اهتمامنا على الينيين التاريخي والفكري معًا للنضج الإباضي، وبالأمر إلى البحر الأول، عمدت إلى بيان الصلاة التاريخية الإباضية العمانية المنافقة أخرى بآسيا، متركزة على صلاة أئمة عمان وفوقها من تطور الفكر الإباضي عبر آسيا. كما ركزت على مراكز عمان في التأثير على بعض الأحداث في الحقبة التاريخية التي تحل إليها النصوص. وبالنظر إلى الينيين الثاني الذي يتضمن الطابع المذهبي للنصوص، فقد تتبعت تطور الفكر الإباضي عبر آسيا. وفضلاً عن ذلك، درست المجالات الفكرية الواردة في السير والسياق الاجتماعي والسياسي العُماني الذي تطورت من خلاله هذه المجالات.
ويحسب مبلغ علمي، فإنه لا توجد دراسة قبل هذه ركّرت على هذا الأمر المهم؛ إذ إن العدد المحدود لمراحل البحث كان يُمثّل أحد التحديّات التي كان عليّ مواجهتها والتغلّب عليها وأن أفهم بالقيام بهذا البحث وإخراجه. وتحقيقك ونشري لهذه السّيرة الثلاث، أرجو أن يكون قد سلّطت الضوء على هذه المنطقة المهمّة من البحث في التاريخ العُماني والمذهب الإباضي.

هذا مع تقدُّم العلم أن المخطوطة والكتّاب التالية تتضمن الرسائل:

الثلاث:

1. **كتاب التقييد** (1). وقد جمع الكتب من لدن أبي محمد بن بركه بوصفه تدويناً لتقديماته التي دوّنتها عن سماعات شيخه: الإمام بيّنّ القاسم سعيد بن عبد الله (توفي 639/939). وأبيض مالك بن محمد بن الخضر. وهذا المخطوطة مهمّة غاية الأهمّية، وذلك بسبب كونه يتضمّن الآراء الإباضية المبكرة والأقوال المقتبسة من أعمال دُوّنت بالبصرة، وبعضها عدّ مفقودًا، ككتاب أبيّ نوح صالح بن الداهن، وكتاب عبد الملك بن أبي صفرة، وكتاب أبيّ الحرّ علي بن الحسين. وتحمل صفحة العنوان اسم مالك المخطوطة، عبد الله بن عمر بن زياد بن أحمد، الذي قال: إنه اشترى الكتّاب مخزونًا من دون تحليل بألفين وأربعمائة دينار، وذلك يوم الأحد آخر المحرم 963/ديسمبر 1555، وهو منسوب من النسخة الأولى للكتاب. يُبد أنّه مشكلةً متعلّقة بتاريخ تدوين النسخة، فعلى الصفحة السابقة على الصفحة ما قبل الأخيرة دوّن أن تاريخ الورقة هو 7 جمادى الأولى (18 مارس 1553) بمدينة قملا. وتحمل نصّ المخطوطة مكتوب بالخط النسخى الواضح المسترسل نفسه، ويضمّ 432 صفحة.

(1) وقد ورد ذكر هذا المخطوطة أيضًا في العمل الإباضي المبكر لأبيّ القاسم البرادي "الجوانب المنتقلة فيما أُخلّ به كتاب الطبقات" (القاهرة: 1885/1302), 218.
على أنه توجد العديد من التداخلات في المخطوطة، بحيث نعثر مثلاً على كتابة بخط مختلف من الصفحة 316 إلى نهاية الكتاب، كما أنه تم إدخال للعديد من الترجم المستقلة المنسوبة إلى مجموعة من المؤلفين المختلفين. وفضلًا عن هذا، يختلف عدد السطور في الصفحة الواحدة بدءًا من الصفحة 316 فصاعدًا، فالفقرة الأول من بداية المخطوطة إلى حدود الصفحة 315، حيث تضم كل صفحة 27 سطراً، وأما القسم الثاني فابتداءً من الصفحة 316 فصاعدًا، ويترابط عدد السطور ما بين 26 إلى 29 سطراً، مع بيان أن حجم قياس صفحات المخطوطة هو 28 سم × 19 سم.

ويمكن العثور على السيرة لأهل خراسان ابتداءً من الصفحة 88 إلى حدود الصفحة 98، والسيرة لأهل خوارزم في الصفحات 135 إلى 136.

هذا وقد تم الفرق من تدوين الأصل بالفعل في يوم الأربعاء الخامس من رجب عام 1096 هـ (10 يونيو 1258)، وكان المنسر هو عبد الله بن عمر بن زياد بن أحمد بن راشد بن عمر، وهو - على ما يبدو - الشخص نفسه الذي اشترى كتاب التقييد.

على أنّ مشكلة إضافية متعلقة بالمخطوطة، وتشمل في الحروف التي لحقتها الموجودة في العديد من الصفحات. وأكثر من هذا، فإن العديد من السطور ممحوّ. والخال أنه لم يتم العثور على نسخ أخرى لهذا المخطوطة مطلقاً، ولعلّ مدار ذلك إلى أن هذه النسخة كانت من النسخة التي ارتأى مالكها حفظها من أن تُنسخ من لدن نسخ آخرين. هذا مع تقديم العلم أن هذا المخطوطة غير مذكور ضمن الأعمال الإبداعية المشهورة، وهذا تم إجماله على غرار ما حدث للعديد من الأعمال التي تشبهه. ومن ثم، فإنه لا يوجد مصدر من المصادر العمانية التاريخية والفقهية يشير إلى هاتين السيرتين. كما أنهما ليستا متضمنتين أيضًا في مجموعة "السيرة والجوابات"، ولا في أي من السير العمانية.
ولم تتم محاولة قبل ذلك لنشر أو تحقيق إحدى المخطوطتين. توجد المخطوطة الأصلية الوحيدة بمكتبة السالمي، ومن السهل أن يقرأها أكثر منه أن يفهمها. وفي العديد من الأمثلة يمكن للمرء أن يتجه إلى الحروف المكتوبة كما هي، أو كما يفترض أن تكون، لكن في بعض الأحيان لا يعثر القارئ لها على دلالة. ولذا السبب، تنقل النسخة المحققة أقوالًا من رسائل إباضية أخرى، وذلك بغاية التوضيح، بما في ذلك سيرة أبي أيوب، وائل بن أبي أيوب. مع العلم أن تم توطيف النص الأخيرة في تحقيق "نسب الإسلام"، واستعمل الجزء الثاني من الرسالة بوصفه مرجعًا. وقد نُشرت النسخة الأولى من سيرة أبي أيوب في كتاب السير والجدوبات، ونُشرت النسخة الثانية نشرت كمرجع في نسخة نزوى. ومع ذلك، فإنني لم أُرد من استعاني بالمخطوطتين السابقتين أن أحقّق النص الأصلي لسيرة أبي أيوب، وإنما استعملتهما لأغراض التصحيح والتصويز، وذلك بغاية استكمال ما أخرج من النص الأصلي من نسخة مكتبة السالمي. والحال أن العديد من الطرابات والفراغات في مخطوطة التقييد يجعل النص مخزومًا في بعض مواضعه. ورد هذته الأمر -بلا مرية- إلى خيروم النسخة الأصلية. ونتيجة لهذا الأمر فقد انخرم النص أو شرح معنى، وحاولت جهدي أن يكون المعنى واضحًا ما أمكن ذلك. ثم إني قمت، فضلاً عن ذلك، بوضع علامات ترقيم النص وتشكيله حينما كان ينقص الشكل. كما قمت بتقسيم النص إلى فقرتين، وذلك بقصد مساعدته القارئ على تتبع انسباب النص على نحو سهل ويسير.

(1) السير والجدوبات، 2: 461، وسيرة وائل بن أيوب "نسب الإسلام"، وقد ذكرت محقّقة الكتاب، وناشرته ألمانيا استعملت النسخة التي بذلتها وزارة الثقافة والتراث القومي، وأشارت إلى أن هذه النسخة إنما كُتبت في يوم الخميس 13/6/1600، 7 جمادى الأولى.

(2) انظر التفاصيل عن المخطوطة في الفصل الثاني، والسيرة باسم وائل بن أيوب، معنونة باسم "نسب الإسلام". وهي في ثماني صفحات بالجلد الأول (186-189).
لمدخ

2 = يوجد المخطوط بمكتبة السالمي ضم مجموع من السنير العمانية.

ولسوء الحظ، فإن غلاف المخطوط حدثت به ترميزات، وبعض الأوراق ضاعت منه. وقد تم تقيد المخطوط ليلة الأربعاء 9 صفر 1232 هـ/ 8 أبريل 1710 م.

في حسن إبراءً(1) زمن الإمام سيف بن سلطان اليعربسي (1692-1711 م).

وقال الناشر - سالم بن حميم بن سلم بن تاج - في خاتمة الكتاب: "نسخت هذا الكتاب بنفسى"، علمًا أن كل صفحة ضمت 26 سطرًا. والمخطوطة عبارة عن جزء من مجموع مكون من 653 صفحة، وهو يتضمن 75 سيرة، مع فهرست بالسير في بداية المجموع. وقد كتب الكتاب بخط نسخي. وتحتل السيرة لأهل المصورة الرقم 44 بين المجموع، وتصنف عشر صفحات (75-84).

وكتب عنوان السيرة بالخط الأحمر، وورد فيه ما يلي: "هذه السيرة الجلية للإمام راشد بن سعيد لأهل المصورة ببلاد السند". وجعل النص مكتوبة بالخط الأسود. على أن الصعوبة التي تواجهنا في هذه النسخة تكمن في أن الخروقات مكتوبة أحيانًا بلا إعجام، كما أن ثمة أخطاء إملائية تظهر بين الفينة والأخرى.

3 نسخة نزوى - وهي نسخة يملكها أحمد بن ناصر السيفي بن نزوى في مجموعة مخطوطاته. وهي ضمن جزء مجموع من السير العمانية يحمل عنوان "كتاب السير الإباضية". وتم الفراج من الكتاب يوم الأربعاء 29 مـن ذي القعدة 1441 هـ/ 15 أبريل 1703.

وقد كتب بخط نسخي، واستعمل فيها الخط الأسود. ولا توجد فيها إشارة إلى الناشر ولا إلى مكان كتابة الكتاب. وقد جمع الكتاب في مجلدين،

(1) إبراء: ولاية من ولايات شرق عمان.

وسرحان: حوليات عمان، ص 59.
يضمن المجلد الأول 47 سيرة، والمجلد الثاني 29 سيرة. وكل مجلد يتضمن كشفًا بالمجموع برمته. وتشكل سيرة المنصورة القسم 22 من المجلد الثاني. وتضم هذه السيرة 12 صفحة، وكل صفحة حجمها 29×9 سم، وتضم 27 سطرًا.

الملكة النسخة هي وزارة التراث والثقافة مسقط. ويضم المجموع ثلاثة أجزاء. ونقرأ في عنوانه ما يلي: "هذا كتاب السير الإباضية الإيضاحية".

ويتضمن مجلد الأول 195 صفحة، والثاني 191 صفحة، والثالث 186 صفحة. وتوجد سيرة المنصورة بالمجلد الثالث ما بين الصفحات 85 و98.

كتبت المخطوطة بخط نسخ أسود. وتضم كل صفحة 21 سطرًا. وتم الفراخ من النسخة يوم الأحد المحرم عام 1299 هـ (ديسمبر 1881).

واسم الناسخ هو حمد بن علي بن مسلم الحميمي. وقد قال في الصفحة الأخيرة: "بعض من إخوته التلامذة تلمذوا على محمد بن سليم الغاربى".

وقد نسخ الكتاب للسلطان برغش بن سعيد بن سلطان البوسعيدي، سلطان زنجبار. والمخطوطة أوضح من سابقتها، غير أنها تتضمن العديد من الكلمات المرسمة على وجه الطابع، والتي بعضها نسخ من المخطوطة الأصلية، وبعضها يعزى إلى الناسخ.


"كتاب السير وال답ات". وهو عبارة عن مجموع بضم رسائل إباضية قامت بتحقيقه سيدة كشف إسحاق، وتم نشره في مجلدين عام 1984.

(1) يميل العنوان إلى منحوب بن رحيل الذي كان آخر زعيم إباضي بالبصرة.

(2) للمزيد من التفاصيل المراجع الموقعة إلى: Custers, al-Ibādiyyah: A Bibliography, 1: 230-231.
من لدن وزارة التراث القومي والثقافة بمسقط. وبحسب المُحقّقة، فإنّ النسخة المُحقّقة اعتمدت على مخطوط رقم 2 موجود في مكتبة المخطوطات بوزارة التراث القومي والثقافة. وهو مخطوط كتب يوم السابع من جميل الوليد الأول 1009 (الثالث عشر من نوفمبر 1600).

هذا وقد عملتُ على وضع علامات الترقيم للنصوص التي حقّقتها، وكذا قمت بشكلها حين كانت النصوص الأصلية تفتقد إلى الشكل في مواضيع كثيرة، كما أنّ مصادر أخرى تم استعمالها بغاية المساعدة في عملية التحقيق، لا سيما منها القرآن.

(1) السير والجوابات، 17:1.
SYMBOLS AND ABBREVIATIONS

1- Text:
   
   [...]  Additions to the text from a different manuscript.
   ﴾...﴿ Qurʾānic verses
   “...”  Quotations in the text.

2- Footnotes:
   
   S.  Original text in the manuscript of the Sālimī Library.
   +  Additions from other manuscripts.
   –  Text missing.

3- Translation:
   
   The quotations from the Qurʾān follow Arberry’s translation (The Koran Interpreted), with occasional changes.
   B.  Kitāb Bayān al-sharʿ
CHAPTER ONE

THE SĪRAH TO THE PEOPLE OF KHWĀRAZM

1.1 Introduction

The sīrah to the people of Khwārazm is enclosed in two folios interpolated between pages 135 and 136 in a manuscript of K. Taqyīd by Abū Muhammad ʿAbd Allāh b. Barakah (d. 355/966). The text was also included in the K. Bayān al-sharʿ by Muḥammad Ibrāhīm al-Kindī (d. c. 508/1114), which shows that the text is treated like a quotation from a book. The epistle appears to record a discussion of a group of Ibāḍī ʿulamāʾ, including Abū Yazīd al-Khwārazmī. Reference to him appears at the beginning of the sīrah; there is also mention of another scholar, Jaʿfar Abū ʿAbd al-Raḥmān. The style employed throughout the sīrah is known as naql bi-samāʾ, or narrative style. Judging from the discourse, this epistle might have been the written record of a study circle (ḥalqa t al-ʿilm), which included a number of missionaries (ḥamalat al-ʿilm). The document is overtly didactic in tone, beginning with questions posed by the missionaries. Abū Yazīd then advises his audience to fear God (al-waṣīyah bi-al-tawwār), a formulaic enjoinder that is common in introductions. Moreover, the text includes the kind of concluding remarks that might have been used at the end of a study circle or class. This text illustrates the sequence of development of Ibāḍism, since it preserves the ideas of four generations of Ibāḍī scholars until the 4th/10th century. This sequence begins in Basra and continues in Khwārazm. The following scholars can be identified:

1- The first is Abū ʿUbaydah Muslim b. Abī Karīmah (d. around 150s/760s), the second Ibāḍī imam in Basra.
2- The second in the chain is Abū Yazīd al-Khwārazmī, who was born in Khwārazm; he was a student of Abū ʿUbaydah Muslim.

(1) Al-Kindī, M., Bayān al-sharʿ, 3: 360-363.
Abū Yazīd is known in the sources for Ibāḍī fiqh as an ‘ālim (scholar) and faqīh (jurist); one of his contemporaries says about him: "I do not know who analysed the question of blood issues (in Islamic law) at this time, either ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Rustum\textsuperscript{(1)} in the Maghrib, or Abū Yazīd al-Khwārazmī in the Mashriq."\textsuperscript{(2)} Regarding this issue, we should consider that Abū Yazīd might have come to Basra as a missionary student from Khwārazm in the first half of the 2\textsuperscript{nd}/8\textsuperscript{th} century and remained in Basra until the end of the century.

3- The third-generation scholars mentioned in the text are Abū Sulaymān, Šāliḥ, brother of Naṣr, and Abū ‘Abd Allāh, who were students of Abū Yazīd. These might well have been Ibāḍī missionaries to Khwārazm at the beginning of the 3\textsuperscript{rd}/9\textsuperscript{th} century.

4- The fourth-generation scholar mentioned is Jaʿfar Abū ‘Abd al-Raḥmān. He might have been a contemporary or a pupil of the second Ibāḍī generation of Khwārazm.

1.2 Commentary

The sīrah of Khwārazm contains the Ibāḍī theological opinions on divine unity and makes use of polemical phrases, for example, fa-akhbirūnā, fa-in zaʿamtum, wa-zaʿamtum fa-hādhā khilāf. These phrases are components in the dialectical style of the theological polemicists in classical Islamic literature. One of the main topics of debate in early Muslim theology among the scholars of Basra was the issue of the sins committed by prophets. Maḥbūb’s debate with Hārūn b. al-Yamān during the imamate of al-Muḥannā b. Jayfar (226-237/841-851) recounts that the jurists endeavored to prevent the theologians from answering people’s questions regarding the sins committed by prophets: When asked, they replied that the prophets had been granted goodness from God in advance.\textsuperscript{(3)} This issue of the prophet as a sinner may have been debated in Basra in the 2\textsuperscript{nd}/8\textsuperscript{th} century.\textsuperscript{(4)} The Azāriqah sub-sector, the Bidʿīyah, argue that God will punish whoever sins, even a prophet.\textsuperscript{(5)}

\textsuperscript{(1)} EI\textsuperscript{2}, s.v. “Rustamid”.
\textsuperscript{(2)} Al-Darjīnī, Ṭabaqāt, 2: 244.
\textsuperscript{(3)} Al-Siyar wa-al-jawabāt, 1: 319.
\textsuperscript{(4)} Ibn Ḥazm, al-Fiṣal, 4: 2.
\textsuperscript{(5)} Van Ess, Frühe mutazilitische Häresiographie, 69.
Ibn Ḥazm says that the Karrāmīyah and al-Bāqillānī from among the Ashʿariyah agree that a prophet is capable of committing sins. However, the question here is whether the prophet would be punished for possible sins in the hereafter.\(^{(1)}\) According to the belief prevalent among the Ṭurayfīyah, prophets can be sinners; if they repent of their sins, they are not considered as unbelievers. Thus they claim that the prophets who sin – even if it is only for a short period of time – would be considered as unbelievers for the duration of the sin.\(^{(2)}\) Theologically, the debate on sin has become broader and tends to reflect the Khārijī, Ibāḍī and Muʿtazilī ideas on the subject.

The main source for the sīrah is the Qur’ān, with its verses serving as proof-texts. It can be said that until the beginning of the 3\(^{rd}\) century Ibāḍism did not make use of ḥadīth to support theological opinions, even though the Ibāḍīs had a complete collection of ḥadīth in the Musnad of al-Rabīʿ b. Ḥabīb (d. 180s/790s). The second source is Qur’ānic exegesis (tafsīr), especially the commentaries on the story of Moses. The third source is the āthār; the opinions of the earliest Ibāḍī imams and scholars, since Abū Yazid uses the phrase “Abū ʿUbaydah related to us that...”.

According to the manuscript into which the sīrah of Khwārazm is bound, there is only one incomplete copy of this text, and no other textual source supplies the missing portion. This text is thus a faithful copy of an incomplete original. As a result, I have had to interpolate in order to improve the accuracy of the text. I have also supplied vocalization (tashkīl) and punctuation, since the original – for the most part – lacks both of them. The symbols and abbreviations used in the editing are intended to clarify the text and are listed above (see page 27).

\(^{(1)}\) Ibn Ḥazm, al- Faction, 4: 2-32.

\(^{(2)}\) Al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt, 1: 138.
1.3 The Text


أبو نصر [و] أبو عبد الله و غيره جماعة منهم، آتوا (2) أبا يزيد، فسألوه عن هذه المسائل، فأجابهم (3) عنها: (4)...

2- سألنا عن الذين (5) سبقتهم (6) في علم الله السعادة و هم اليوم مقيمون على الشرك، هل عليهم (7) الغضب واللعنة (8) من الله؟ وهل يدفع (9) ذلك عليهم بالتوبة (10)?

فالله: نعم، و تبيان ذلك في كتاب الله عز وجل في قوله تعالى (11) في سورة (12) آل عمران: "كيف يهدى الله قوما كفروا بعد إيمانهم و شهدوا أن الرسول حق وجاءهم البينات و الله لا يهدى القوم الظالمين أولاً كيف جرأوه أن عليهم لعنة الله والملاكاة والناس أجمعين خالدين فيها لا يخفف عنهم العذاب ولا هم ينظرون إلا الذين نابوا من بعده ذلک وأصلحوا...").

B. هذا: في هذا، (1)
O. آتوا: أتوا، (2)
B. فأجابهم: فاجابهم، (3)
O. منها: منها، (4)
B. الدين: الدين، (5)
O. سبقت: سبق، (6)
O. عليهم: عليهم، (7)
B. الغضب واللعنة: الغضب واللعنة، (8)
B. يدفع يدفع: يرفع، (9)
O. بالنوبة: بالنوبة، (10)
O. تعالى: -، (11)
O. سورة: -، (12)
O. كيف يهدى الله قوما كفروا بعد إيمانهم وشهدوا أن الرسول حق و جاءهم البينات، (13) إلى قوله: "لا يخفف عنهم العذاب ولا هم ينظرون إلا الذين نابوا".
نزلت في الحارثي (1). بِ سُويد (2) لْ عاليما، لم يعزُانوأُوصيكم بتقوى الذي لم يزَ فيهم. وخلقَ الملائكةُ والنبيّينُ والمؤمنين الذين (3) ولدوا ونشأوا(4) على الإيمان، وعليه ماتوا. فهؤلاء كناوا في ولاية الله قبل أن يخلقهم، ولم (5) تقتطع تلك الولاية عنهم.

4- فأخبرونا(6) عن أمرِ الله والدي: هل يتغيّر (7)، أم (8) هو (9) قائمٌ علِى حالٍ واحدة؟

فإن زعمتم أنه قائمٌ على حال واحدة(10) لا يتغيّر (11)، فقد أمر اللهُ موسى أن يأمَر قومه أن يقتُلوا (12) أنفسهم حين ظَلموا أنفسهم باتخاذهم(13) العجل، فقتلت بعضهم (14) بعصهم (15) فقتلاحهم سبعين ألفًا، ثم رفع عنهم القتل وتبَاب

المصطلحات:
(1) الحارث: الحارث
(2) يعزَا: يعرا، يغرا
(3) مله: بعمله
(4) خلق: خلق
(5) الذين: الذين
(6) Fasc. 6: فلا
(7) نشأوا: نشوا
(8) لم: لمو
(9) فأخبرونا: فاخبرنا
(10) يتغيروا: يتغيروا
(11) أم: لو
(12) وهو: وهو
(13) واحدة: واحد
(14) تنغير: تنغير
(15) يقتلوا: يقتلوه
(16) باتخاذهم: باتخاذهم
(17) بعضهم: بعضهم
(18) بلغ: بلغت
عليهم. وأمر الله محمدًا صل الله عليه وسلم أن ينهى أمه أن يقتلوه أو يفسدوهم، فقال: «يا أيها الذين آمنوا لا تأكلوا أفواهكم بانتظام إلّا أن تكونوا بحارةً» (9: 29-30). فهذا خلاف لما زعمتم أن ولاية الله للملائكة والنبيين والمقيمين على الشرك الذين سبقتهم في علم الله السعادة واحدة. وكيف يكون في ولاية الله من أمر الله نبيه عليه السلام أن يقاتلهم ويبرأ منهم، وقد قال: 


وزعمتم أنه لا يتوب ولا يرحم إلا من كان(1) لـُهُ أصل ولايَةً عند الله وليس عليه من الله اللعنة، وقد لعَن الله قومًا وغضبًا عليهم في كتابه نِم تاب عليهم، كقول(2) الله في سورة النحل: ِمن كفر بالله من بعد إيمانه إلا من أكثره وقلبه مظلمين بإيمان وليكن من شرّه بالکفر صدرا فعليهم غضب من الله ولهم عذاب عظيم(3) إلى قوله: لا جرم أنهم في الأخيرة هم الخاسرون(4) ثم إن ربك للذين هاجروا من بعد ما فتنوا ثم جاهم وصبروا فإن ربك معن بعدها لفعور رحيم(5) (16: 2-10) فاتقوا الله ولا جعلوا المشركين أولياء حتى ينوبوا ويرجعوا عن شركهم، فإن الله قد برء منهم ورسوله والمؤمنون، حيث يقول: وأذان من الله ورسوله إلى الناس يوم الحج الأكبر أن الله بريء من المشركين ورسوله فإن تبين فهم غير كافم وإن تسوؤهم... إلى قوله: فإن تابوا وأقاموا الصلاة وآنوا الزكاة فخلعوا سبيلهم(6)... (7: 3-5).

7- قال: وحدثنا أبو عبيدة سفيان قال: هل يتولى(1) الله المشرك الذي سبق(2) في علمه له(3) السعادة؟ قال: لا، حتى يخرج(4) الله(5) من الشرك، وكان يقرأ هذه الآية: إن الذين آمنوا ثم كفروا ثم آمنوا ثم كفروا ثم آمنوا ثم كفروا لم يك فِي لَهُ ليغفر لهَم ولا ليهديهم سبيلًا(7) إلى قوله: إن المنافقين في الذرك الأسفل من...
النَّارِ وَلَنْ تَجِدَ لَهُمْ نَصِيرًا إِلاَّ الَّذِينَ تَااُُاا إِنَّ اللَّهَ لاَ يَهْدِي الْقَااََْ الظَّالِمِينَ﴾ (4: 132-141). فَلا تأخذوا بقول المُستحدين ولا برأيهم، فإنهما (1) أعداء الأديان والنبيين، يقول الله:﴾ (68: 20)﴾ 8- فنحن نتخاَف عليكم، وتُسأل الله البر الرحيم أن يُاففنا ويلام شعثنا، ويرد علينا إلفُتانا، ولا يُفرِّق جماعةنا في الدنيا ولا في الآخرة، فإنه وليُّ ما وُكِّل، والسَّ عائِلَ عليهكم.

1.4 Translation

This is to our companions (aṣḥābunā) in Khwārazm

1- Ja’far Abū ‘Abd al-Raḥmān says that our brothers (aṣḥābanā), who are Abū Sulaymān, Ṣāliḥ, the brother of Naṣr, and Abū ‘Abd Allāh and their group, came to Abū Yazīd and asked him about these issues, and he answered them [as follows].

2- We asked him about those who have already acquired salvation according to God’s knowledge, but who today are polytheists. Are they to face God’s anger and condemnation? And is this averted if they repent?

He answered, “Yes.” This can be proven from God’s Book(7) in Sūrah Āl ‘Imrān: “How shall God guide a people who have disbelieved after they believed, and bore witness that the Messenger is true and the clear signs came to them? God guides not the people of the evildoers. Those, their recompense is that there shall rest on them the curse of God and of the angels and of men, altogether, therein dwelling forever; the

According to the Prophet’s ḥadīth: "كل مُحَدَّثة بِدَعَة".

(6) This term is used in the Ibāḍī compilations to refer to the Ibāḍī followers, as opposed to the term qawm, which refers to non-Ibāḍī Muslims.

(7) Qurʾān.
chastisement shall not be lightened for them; no respite shall be given them. But those who repent thereafter, and make amends.” [(3:86-89); this verse was revealed concerning al-Ḥārith b. Suwayd].

3- I advise you to fear Him who always knows [everything], for nothing escapes [His knowledge]. Nothing happens except He has [prior] knowledge of it; before their creation, He knows about them. He created the angels, the prophets, and believers, who were born and raised faithful and died the same. They were under God’s protection before their creation; this protection has never ceased.

4- Inform us about the order of God and religion: does this order change? Or does it remain [static] in one state?

If you claim that it is an order that does not change, then [you are wrong, for] God instructed Moses to order his people to destroy themselves when they corrupted themselves by worshipping the calf. They killed each other and the number killed was seventy thousand. God then lifted His order and forgave them. He also commanded Muḥammad (peace be upon him) to prohibit his people from destroying themselves, and He said: “O believers, consume not your goods between you in vanity, except there be trading, by your agreeing together. And kill not one another. Surely God is compassionate to you. But whosoever does that in transgression and wrongfully, him We shall certainly roast at a Fire; and that for God is an easy matter” (4:29-30).

This [verse] contradicts your claim that God’s protection of the angels, the prophets, and polytheists who had previously acquired salvation in God’s knowledge, be one [and unchanging]. How is it, then, that there are those whom God commanded His Prophet to fight and disavow! And He said: “Journey freely in the land for four months and know that you cannot frustrate the will of God, and that God degrades the unbelievers. A proclamation, from God and His Messenger, unto mankind on the day of the Greater Pilgrimage: God is quit, and His Messenger, of the idolaters. So if you repent, that will be better for you; but if you turn your backs, know that you cannot frustrate the will of God. And give thou good tidings to the unbelievers of a painful chastisement;” (9:2-3). You claim that whomever God curses, He never protects. As for those who made false accusations against ‘Ā’ishah(1) and

---

(1) ʿĀ’ishah bt. Abī Bakr was one of the Prophet’s wives. She died in 57/676. El², s.v. "ʿĀ’isha bint Abī Bakr".
Ṣafwān,¹ He said: "Those who came with the slander are a band of you; do not reckon it evil for you; rather it is good for you. Every man of them shall have the sin that he has earned charged to him; and whosoever of them took upon himself the greater part of it, him there awaits a mighty chastisement" until He says: "But for God’s bounty to you and His mercy and that God turns, and is All-wise" (24:11-21). Then He said: "Let not those of you who possess bounty and plenty swear off giving to kinsmen and the poor and those who emigrate in the way of God; but let them pardon and forgive. Do you not wish that God should forgive you? God is All-forgiving, All-compassionate." And then: "Surely those who cast it up on women in wedlock that are heedless but believing shall be accursed in the present world and the world to come; and there awaits them a mighty chastisement" (24:22-23).

5- Tell us, is it not true that Ḥassān b. Thābit al-Anṣārī, Misṭaḥ, Abū Bakr’s relative, and Ḥamnah bt. Jaḥsh were amongst those who slandered ʿĀʾishah? Did they repent? And did the Prophet (peace be upon him) and the believers forgive them, or did they not? God says: "And those who cast it up on women in wedlock, and then bring not four witnesses, scourge them with eighty stripes, and do not accept any testimony of theirs ever; those—they are the ungodly, save such as repent thereafter and make amends; surely God is All-forgiving, All-compassionate" (24:4-5).

6- Furthermore, you claim that God forgives only those associated to Him [who have His protection] and they are not at all cursed by Him. [This is not true,] for in His Book He cursed the people who angered Him, then later He forgave them. In Sūrah al-Nāḥāl (bee), He said: "Whoso disbelieves in God, after he has believed—excepting him who has been compelled, and his heart is still at rest in his belief—but whosoever’s

---

¹The particular incident referred to here occurred on the return from the expedition to the Banū Muṣṭaliq, 5-6/624-625. When the march was ordered, ʿĀʾishah was not in her tent, having gone in search of a valuable necklace she had dropped. As her litter was curtained, it was not noticed that she was not in it, until the army reached the next halt. Meanwhile, finding the camp gone, she sat down to rest, hoping that someone would come back to fetch her once her absence was noticed. It was night, and she fell asleep. In the morning she found Ṣafwān, who let her mount his camel and escorted her, leading the camel on foot. This gave occasion for enemies to raise a malicious scandal. The ringleader among them was the chief of the Medinese hypocrites, ʿAbd Allāh b. Ubayy, who is referred to in the last clause of this verse. See Ibn Hishām, al-Ṣīrah al-nabawīyah, 3: 345.
breast is expanded in unbelief, upon them shall rest anger from God, and there awaits them a mighty chastisement” until He says: “without a doubt, in the world to come they will be the losers. Then, surely thy Lord—unto those who have emigrated after persecution, then struggled and were patient—surely thy Lord thereafter is All-forgiving, All-compassionate” (16:106-110).

So fear God, and do not take unbelievers as friends unless they repent and leave polytheism, for God and His Apostle and believers have dissolved their treaty obligations with pagans. God said: “A proclamation, from God and His Messenger, unto mankind on the day of the Greater Pilgrimage: God is quit, and His Messenger, of the idolaters. So if you repent, that will be better for you; but if you turn your backs...” until He says: “But if they repent, and perform the prayer, and pay the alms, then let them go their way...” (9:3-5).

7- He(1) said that Abū ‘Ubaydah(2) was asked: Does God sustain care for the pagan whose felicity had been preordained? Abū ‘Ubaydah said: “No, not until He pulls him, the polytheist, out of his polytheism.” [To support his view,] Abū ‘Ubaydah recited the following verse [from the Qur’ān]: “Those who believe, and then disbelieve, and then believe, and then disbelieve, and then increase in unbelief, God is not likely to forgive them, neither to guide them on any way,” until He says: “…surely the hypocrites will be in the lowest reach of the Fire; thou will not find for them any helper, except for those who repent” (4:137-146). So, do not accept the views or opinions of innovators, because they are the enemies of religion and the prophets. In this matter God said: “…and who is further astray than he who follows his caprice without guidance from God? Surely God guides not the people of the evildoers” (28:50).

8- We fear for you and ask the kind and merciful God to bestow prosperity on us, unite us, bring about felicity, and not to separate us in this world and in the hereafter. He is our sustainer, and peace be upon you.

(1) Abū Yazīd.
(2) Abū ‘Ubaydah Muslim b. Abī Karīmah.
THE SĪRAH TO THE PEOPLE OF KHURĀSĀN

2.1 Introduction

Upon investigation, it appears that this epistle is composed of two parts which differ somewhat in both style and content. This raises the issue of the epistle’s authenticity. The first portion consists of a fatwā concerning wilāyah (association) and barāʾah (dissociation) with regard to some of the Prophet’s Companions. This fatwā might have been a reply to questions from the people of Khurāsān about the doctrines of association and dissociation. Basically, the author uses a polemical style, which includes a long section in which he explains the fundamentals of the religion (uṣūl al-dīn). This style is employed in order to refute opposing views on the subject.

The second section comprises a tract entitled “The Genealogy of Islam” (Dhikr nasab al-islām). The main subject here is the Ibāḍī point of view on various issues of Islamic jurisprudence and theology. It also provides a general elucidation of Islamic faith, including manners of worship, laws governing human affairs, and legislation concerning various corporal and capital punishments. In fact, this epistle has many characteristics that can also be found in the sīrah of Wā’il b. Ayyūb al-Ḥaḍramī, in terms of both content and style. It is worth noting that the title of the sīrah is also similar to that of Wā’il b. Ayyūb, which carries the title Nasab al-islām. The problem is that Wā’il b. Ayyūb al-Ḥaḍramī was an Ibāḍī scholar who lived in the 2nd/8th century, while this letter was sent at the beginning of the 4th/10th century. This justifies the assumption that the author of the epistle to the people of Khurāsān used and quoted from the sīrah of Wā’il b. Ayyūb and combined two sīrahats into one, with an introduction, main body, and conclusion. According to the Jāmiʿ of Ibn Jaʿfar (3rd/9th century), we find a quotation from Dhikr nasab al-islām by Wā’il b. Ayyūb. Al-Sālimī, in dealing with the explanation of the Ibāḍī creed in Oman (‘aqīdat ahīʿ Umān), quotes extensively from the text of

(1) For further detail, see Crone and Zimmermann, The Epistle of Sālim ibn Dhakwān, 308-309.
(2) Ibn Jaʿfar, Jāmiʿ, 1: 115.
Nasab al-islām.(1) In the last chapter of his work comparing North African creeds, Cuperly examines an Omani Ibāḍī creed published in K. Kashf al-ghummah as 'aqīdat ahī 'Umān. The text of 'aqīdat ahī 'Umān quotes from the sīrah of Abū Ayyūb Wā’il b. Ayyūb – a work with the title Nasab al-islām.(2) However, it appears that Cuperly did not see the text of Nasab al-islām as it was not available to him to consult in his examination.

2.2 Commentary

At first glance, it is clear that the sīrah is written in the form of a letter from one group to another. The authors were almost certainly a group of Omani 'ulamā’, because they say, “We are writing to you out of kindness,” while the recipients are a group of Ibāḍīs in Khurāsān, for the epistle states, “For those who have written to us from among the people of Khurāsān”. The epistle has no specific addressee and probably never had one, since it is really a letter to all of the Ibāḍīs of Khurāsān.

At the beginning of the epistle there is no basmalah. One cannot be sure whether this was a mistake made by the copyist, or whether the omission is merely a convention; some of the copyists of siyar generally did not use the basmalah to begin their copies. Thus the copyist might have omitted it on the grounds that the siyar were considered a single, self-contained corpus of literature. In that case, to mention the basmalah at the beginning of each epistle would have been superfluous. The batrā’ genre of literature, namely that which starts without the basmalah, began in the Umayyad period, when letters or sermons appeared without this usual ritual prolegomenon.(3)

The sīrah starts with the obligatory taḥmīd, which is followed by a waṣiyah bi-al-taqwā (enjoinder to piety). This is a common feature of early doctrinal epistles and speeches, originating in Iraq or within the Iraqi sphere of influence.(4) Throughout the epistle the author uses the connectors wa and aw sparingly as well as attached personal pronouns, to evoke an oratory style. This could be due to the fact that the speech was transcribed by way of dictation; when this is the case, the copyist has to employ a style replete with wa and aw in order to give the final

---

(2) Cuperly, Introduction à l’étude de l’Ibāḍisme et de sa théologie, 261-278.
(4) Al-Jāḥiẓ, al-Bayān wa-al-tabyīn, 1: 118.
text literary cohesion. This sīrah has served as an influential model for many of the features found in later Ibāḍī epistles, dating from the 6th century through the 10th century. Examples include Risālat al-diyyānāt, by al-Shammākī, and works by al-Kindī and al-Kharāssīnī. This style of writing has also been adopted by the likes of Ibn Qudāmah al-Ḥanbalī in treatises on the Ḥanbalī creed.

With regard to the terminology and expressions used in the text, we can highlight two salient terms, the first being nasab al-islām. This is mentioned in several siyar texts, including the sīrah of Abū Ayyūb. The basic meaning of this term has been suggested by Khalaf b. Ziyād al-Bahrānī (the first half of the 2nd/8th century), who says in his sīrah, “we shall remind you of God, and of Islam, which is the religion that is attributed to Him (al-islām alladhī nusiba lahu).” This is also used by Hāshim b. Ghaylān in his sīrah to Imam ‘Abd al-Malik b. Ḥumayyid (207-226/823-841). This is a text he was compelled to write in order to educate the masses. It contains the following: “You should elucidate for them nasab al-islām (wa-aẓhirū lahum nasab al-islām) and educate them in what they should perform, namely that which is good, and in what they should eschew, namely that which is evil.” To illustrate the use of this term in a later period, we see in the sīrah of ‘Abd Allāh Muḥammad b. Īsā al-Sarrī (second half of the 5th/11th century), entitled Fī al-farq bayna al-imām al-ʿālim wa-ghayr al-ʿālim (On the Difference between a Learned Imam and an Unlearned Imam), that the author describes the possibility of appointing someone to the imamate even if he is known to commit sins. In such a case, the scholars will ask him to repent; if he does and, in addition, accepts the creed contained in nasab al-islām, then his imamate is acceptable. Furthermore, this terminology is used in the sīrah inviting people to Ibāḍism. This epistle says: “You should elucidate for him nasab al-islām; only then is it possible to accept him.”

All these quotations suggest that the usage of the term nasab al-islām in

---

(1) Ennami, Studies in Ibāḍism, 249.
(2) Al-Kindī, A., al-iḥtiḍā, 235-239.
(3) Al-Kharāssīnī, Fawākih, 1: 189-197.
(5) See Chapter Three, on this sīrah.
(6) Al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt, 2: 37.
Abū Ayyūb’s epistle is based upon the current usage among the Ibāḍīs in Basra. The text intends to educate the Ibāḍī followers about Islam, and possibly also about the means by which they can acquire such knowledge (i.e. the chain of transmission, or *isnād*). In so doing, the Ibāḍī would be sure in his belief and in the way in which he acquired it. Both of these postulates highlight two important points. The first is that we can see the early creed, or belief structure, of the nascent Ibāḍī community in Basra; the second is that we encounter the technical language used in religious texts that subsequently issued from Basra.

Juxtaposed with the first term, *nasab al-islām*, is the second expression, *al-manzilah bayna al-manzilatayn* (lit. the position between the two positions), which refers to the position of the grave sinner in Muʿtazilī terminology. This intermediate position is one of the defining characteristics of Muʿtazilī theology. At the beginning of the 3rd/9th century Mahbūb b. al-Raḥīl and Hārūn b. al-Yamān, two Ibāḍī leaders in Basra, engaged in an extensive theological debate concerning the nature of sin. Hārūn classified sin according to three specific categories. The first type of sin is that which makes the perpetrator a disbeliever. The second type is that which, when committed, renders any judgment of belief or disbelief impossible. The third type is that which God forgives. Hārūn, in order to justify his own particular view, referred to the case of the Prophet’s behaviour with regard to his wife, ʿĀʾīshah, after the battle of Banū Muṣṭaliq. The Prophet abstained from expressing an opinion until the Qurʾān acquitted ʿĀʾīshah of the allegation that was brought against her. Hārūn held that she was in a “position between two positions.” What is the Ibāḍī perception of the precise nature of this intermediate position? According to al-Jannāwunī, the Ibāḍīs both believe and do not believe in the intermediate position. With respect to the latter stance, the Ibāḍī belief is that they do not accept any position between belief (*īmān*) and disbelief (*kufr*). With respect to the former stance, they do believe in the intermediate position, since they regard the grave sinner to be in a state of *kufr al-niʿmah*; conversely, the Muʿtazilah regard a grave sinner as a *fāsiq* (open sinner).¹ This concept may have a basis in the very early days of Ibāḍism. We can see in ʿAbd Allāh b. Ibāḍ’s letter to ʿAbd al-Malik b. Marwān that the early Ibāḍīs split from the Khawārij, because the latter considered Muslims who

---

committed grave sins to be polytheists.\textsuperscript{(1)} Abū Sākin ʿĀmir al-Shammākhī (d. 792/1389) states in his epistle, \textit{Risālat al-diyanāt}, that:

„We hold that the state of hypocrisy is the intermediate position between faith and polytheism. We hold that hypocrites are neither believers nor polytheists. We hold that the polytheists are neither believers nor hypocrites. We believe that the believers are neither hypocrites nor polytheists. We hold that there is no intermediate position between faith and disbelief. We hold that he is an infidel-ingrate.“\textsuperscript{(2)}

Al-Muṣ'abī (d. 1188/1774), on the other hand, notes that the Ibāḍī Weltanschauung and that of the Muʿtazilah with regard to the grave sinner are doctrinally similar, but differ in expression (\textit{lafż}). The Muʿtazilah refuse to indict the Muslim on his \textit{kufār}, even if he is a grave sinner.\textsuperscript{(3)} This can be seen in the contemporary accounts of Wāṣil b. ʿAṭā during the period of the birth of Muʿtazilism. In the course of a lecture delivered by his teacher al-Ḥasan al-Baṣrī, Wāṣil stated that the grave sinner is neither a believer nor a disbeliever; rather, he or she occupies an intermediate position.\textsuperscript{(4)} To conclude this assessment, it is possible that the Ibāḍīs of Basra were influenced by the Muʿtazilah during the 2\textsuperscript{nd}/8\textsuperscript{th} century. Amidst the polemical discourse between the two parties, ideas must have been exchanged and either adopted in full or modified.\textsuperscript{(5)}

As for the sources of this epistle, the most important one is the Qurʾān. The epistle quotes Qurʾānic verses liberally, which are usually prefixed by expressions such as \textit{qāla Allāh} and \textit{wā-qaña taʾālā}. Sometimes the verses are interwoven into the writer's own voice, so that the writer effectively coopts the Qurʾānic language to convey his own message. The epistle also contains fragments of Prophetic \textit{ḥadīth}. The use of \textit{ḥadīth} is frequent in the Ibāḍī epistles of the first period, for example, the sīrah of Sālim b. Dhakwān, the sīrah of Shabīb b. ʿĀṭiyah, and the sīrah of Abū ʿUbaydah and Abū Mawdūd Ḥājib.\textsuperscript{(6)}

\textsuperscript{(1)} Cook, \textit{Early Muslim Dogma}, 65.
\textsuperscript{(3)} Al-Juʿbarī, \textit{al-Buʿd al-ḥaḍārī}, 522.
\textsuperscript{(5)} Nallino, “Rapporti fra la dogmatica Muʿtazilita e quella degli Ibāḍiti dell’Africa Settentrionale”, 455-460.
\textsuperscript{(6)} See al-Salimi, “Identifying the Ibadi Omani Siyar”, 115-162.
إلى مَن كُتب إلينا من إخوانا من أهل خراسان:

1- سلامٌ عليكم، فإنَّا نَحْمِدُ إليكُمَ اللهَ، لا إِلَهَ إِلَّا هوَ، عادِلٌ في فضنلهِ، مُتفضّلٌ في عَنْدِهِ، حكيمٌ في فعَّلهِ، لَهُ أَحْسَنُ الأسماءِ، وأشرفُ المدح، وأحكمُ الأفعالِ، وأتَّقُنُ التدبيرِ، بِيَدِهِ الحِيّرِ وهو على كُلّ شيءٍ قديِّرٍ.

2- وَإِنَّا نُوصِيكمُ بِتَقَوِّي اللهِ، نَهاكم عَنُ العملِ بأعمنال أحنِ النفاق، وأخذِ عليكمَ العهدَ والميثاقَ على الوفاء له باوامرتهِ وزَواجَه (السِّت) ابتلاكمِ (1) بما واحِتيرُكمَ [فيها]. فأتقوا اللهِ، واستَسيموا كَما أمرَكُم اللهُ، وادُكروا الموتِ والْقُبرَ، والبعثَ منها والنشورِ والْوُقَفِ، حيثُ يُثَبِّتُ الَّذينَ أَتَبَعُوا مِن الْذِّئَبَةِ أَتَبَعُوا (2: 166)، وَيَغْفِرُ الْعَذَابَ وَيَعفِّفَ عَنْ الْحَرَجِ وَيَغْفِرُ الْعَذَابَ وَيَعفِّفَ عَنْ الْحَرَجِ.

3- كَتَبنا إليكُم بِنُرّا  منّا لكُم، وإجلالا  ليقدِنرِكُم، وتعظِيما  ليحقِّكُن، ونحُ ومَ ن قيبَلَنا مِن المسلمينِ في سيترِ مِن اللهِ ورغبة في إلفتيكم، وأهلُ ذلَك (4) أنتم ميّا. أتنِالهُ تعمُّهُ وتُداوُّهُ معكُم، ونَحُ ومَ ن قيبَلَنا مِن المسلمينِ في سيترِ مِن اللهِ، والحمدُ للهِ ربّ العالمين، وصلى اللهُ على رسولهِ وسلَّم.

4- إنَّ سَألَ سائلٌ، فقالَ: أخبِروني عمَّ كان في ولاية المسلمينِ إلى أن غاب عنهمَ أو ماتَ، ثمَّ شهدَ عليهِ من المسلمينُ بعدَ موتهِ شاهدا عدلاً من أهلِ دعوتهم، منهمْ تَبَصَّرَ [في] الولايةِ والبراءة، آخرَ أحدَ حديثَ كَفَّرَ بهُ طُمَّ أقامَ على كَفَّرَ حِيّ ماتٍ، وَلَمْ تَعْلَمَ أنهُ تابُ مِنْهُ؛ هل يُقبلُ المسلمونَ ذلك منهم على وليِّهم بعد موتِه؛ لقول من قال: إنَّ مِن ماتَ فقد ماتَ حِيّه؟.

---
(1) الدّي: اللّه
(2) ابتلاكم: بِلاَكِم
(3) يغض: بعص
(4) ذلك: ذلك
فإنّا نقولُ في ذلك ولا قُوةٌ إلا باللهِ: أمّا إنْ كان المشهودٌ(1) عليه إمامًا من الأئمة الذين(2) اختارهم(3) فقهاء المسلمين للفقه والإدارة في الدولة، فبايعوه على طاعة ربيهم، وسلموا إليه أمرهم وذاعت بولائهم، أو كان إمامًا من أئمة الدين السُّددين شهِّر فضلهم مع المسلمين وأجمعوا على ولايَّتهم، مثل عمَّرة بن الخطاب، وعبد الله بن مسعود، وجابر بن ربيعة، والجندل بن مسعود، والربيع بن حبيب، ومصعب بن الرحبيل، وموسى بن علي، ومحمَّد بن محبوب، ومن كان مثلهم ممّا نذكَّر اسمه معهم، فهؤلاء لو شهد(4) عليهم أو على أحد منهم جماعة منهم المشهودة(5) - ولو كثر عددُهم - من بعد موته أنَّه كان أحدَ حديثاً قبل موته كسفَّر به ثم لم يتب من حديثه وعليه، لم يقبل ذلك المسلمون عليه، وكان في الحق الواقع عليهم أن يبتزوا من الشهود ثُمَّ يستتبثوه(6)، فإن تابوا رجعوا إلى منظ”)هم التي كانوا عليها، وإن تنمموا على شهاداتهم وتُّم المسلمون على البراءة منهم. ولو كانوا إما شهدوا على واحدٍ من هؤلاء الذين سُئذواهم مع المسلمين في حياته، لم يقبل ذلك المسلمون عليه، وبرزوا منه، ثم استتابوه، فإن تابوا قبلوا منه، وإن أبى ثمُّ المسلمون على البراءة منه.

وذلك كأئمة الضلال الذين شهدت أحداثهم مع المسلمين وأجمعوا على البراءة منهم، مثل معاوية بن أبي سفيان، وأموّة بن العاص، ومن كان مثلهم ممّا لم نذكر اسمهم منهم. فأولئك لو شهد لكل واحدٍ منهم مانعة شاهدة(6)، أقبلُ أو

1. المشهود: المجهول، O
2. الذين: المجهول، O
3. اختارهم: المجهول، O
4. شهد: المجهول، O
5. الشهود: المجهول، O
6. يستبتيه: المجهول، O

There is a gap in the manuscript. (7) أقبل: المجهول، O (8)


معاوية وعمر بن العاص بولايتهما؛ لأنهم قالوا لكم: قد أجمعتم أنتم ومن خالفكم على أحق أنتم كانوا في الأصل أولياء، فنحن ننولهكم على الأصل الذي أجمعتم عليه، وإن آمنتم أقفتم عليهم الحجة (1) بإحداثهم، قالوا: لا نقبل منكم لأنهم قد ماتوا أو ماتت حججهم. فإن آمنتم عدرا تموهم بولايتهما إياهم بعد قيام الحجة عليهم بإحداثهم أتسبع عليهم الفتق وبطلت دعواكم التي فرقتم بها عمن قد ضل عنها من الخلق (2)، فإن ضبقتم ذلك عليهم وبرئتم منهم فقد قضمت قولكم: إن من مات لم تقبل عليه شهادة الشهود بعد موته حديث كفر به. وقد سمعت من يقول من المسلمين: قال عزان بن الصقر: لو أن رجلاً من صناعة في العراق، فسمع بعضفائل علي بن أبي طالب، ولم يسمع بإحداثه، كان له أن يتولاه. فإن شهد معه شاهد بإحداثه كان عليه أن يبرأ منه. وهذا دليل على أنه قد وجب على من قد قامت عليه الحجة بإحداث علي بعد موتته البراءة. وكأن عزان بن الصقر من فقهاء أهل عمان، وهذا الذي (3) نذهب إليه ونعمد عليه.

9- ذُكر نسب الإسلام: الله ربي، ومحمد نبيا، والقرآن إماما، وبيت الله الحرام فيتنا، والإسلام ديننا، وهو من الإيمان، والإيمان من الإسلام، والتحقي من الإيمان، والسير والوفاء من الإيمان، بعض ذلك من بعض على استكمال (4) الإيمان بما فيه، وإقامة حدوده والعمل بحقه. ولا يثبت الإيمان بانتقاص فرائض الله، ولا بالمقام على حرام الله.

---

(1) الحجة: الحجة، O.
(2) الخلق: الخلق، O.
(3) يسمع: سمع، O.
(4) وجب: وجب، O.
(5) الذي: الذي، O.
(6) استكمال: استكمال، O.
10- والإيمان هو شهادةً أن لا إله إلا الله وحده لا شريك له وأن محمد رسول الله، وأن حقاً ما جاء به عن الله والإيمان بالله، واليوم الآخر، والملائكة، والكتب، والنبيين، والجنة، والنار، وأن الساعة آتية لا ريب فيها، وأن الله يبعث من في القبور، والأمر بالمعروف وإتيانه، والنفي عن المنكر واجتنابه، حيث أمر الله، وفيه، كما بين في كتابه وأمر من عدل ذلك وحقه.

11- وإقام الصلاة بمواقيتها في الليل والنهار، بتمام ركوعها وسجودها، وإحكام طهورها، وما يقال فيها من لذن إحرامها إلى إحلالها، وخشوع ووقار، والشهادة، لها في الجماعة، ولا يفتح ولا يومان فيها، ولا يمسح على النفس عند الطهارة لها. وقصرها في السفر والجماع، في السفر جائز، على كل مقيم مجان، وصلاة الفجر والنافورة، والصلاة على مثوب لكل القبلة من بعد غسلهم وتمكنهم، ثم دفنهم في جُنُورهم. ولا صلاة بعد صلاة الغداد حتى تطلع الشمس، ولا صلاة بعد صلاة العصر حتى تغرب الشمس، إلا الناسى أو صلاة على ميته.

12- وإيتاء الزكاة بما أوجبها الله فيه من تلك الأصناف المعروفة، يؤولى

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>معنوي رقم</th>
<th>معنوي مصطلح</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>شهادة: سهاده، O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>الله: الله يه، O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>وفيه: وفي عنه، O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>سجودها: -، S</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>إحلالها: ذلك إحلالها، O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>الشهادة: السهاده، O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>الجماعة: الحموع، O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>جائز: حايز، P</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>كل: -، S</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>المعروفة: -، O</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
على رضي الله 

(1) وصياً بينه، O

(2) الله، O

(3) الحق، O

(4) قد صفتها، P، S

(5) أهله، O

(6) يجعل، O

(7) إذا، P، O

(8) وما استحفظه الله، P، S

(9) ردية، O

(10) في من: فيمن، P، O؛ فمن، P، S
14 - وغض البصر عن الحرام، وحفظ الفروج عن الحرام وعمما نزه الله المؤمنين وبراءهم منه، وسائر الرجال الذين أمر الله بسندهم فيما أمر عباده وأدخلهم به، الرجال منهم. وقد أمر الله النساء في بعض ذلك(1) بما لم يأمر به الرجال من السنور، وأن يقرن في بيوتهن، ويسرين(2) بخمرهن على جيوسهن، ولا يضربن بألجلهن ليعمل ما يخفون من زينتهن، إلا ما ظهر من ذلك ما لا حرام فيه ولا غيب به، من كحلي في عينيها أو حائتم في بيتها، فلما(3) أمر الأم، أبدت سوارها بمضحها، أو قرطط بها بذدتها، أو خلخالا(4) بقدمها، أو بشبا من سائر بدنها سيوى وجهها، وكيفها لغير ذي محروم من الرجال لها، فهي عاصية لربها حتى تُنكو من ذنبها، ولا يشمت ولا يوشم لهن، ولا يقبلن أساسهن، ولا يصلين ولا يوضع لهن، ولا يذعن ببرأ ناصبيهن، ولا يطمعن حدودهن، ولا ينعمن وجوههن، ولا يبعون ولا يenyو(5) من بعدهن، ولا ينزعونون النواح(6) تلذذا به منهن، ولا يسرعون(7) عند غير ذي محروم من الرجال لهن، ولا يتردقن(8) إلا عند أزواجهن، واتقان المحيض، واعتزال النساء حتى يتطهرن(9)، والاغتسال مجانابة، واستئذان في البيوت، وذكر اسم الله على النذيبة، ولا تأكلوا(10).

15 - وال_PROTO|  
لا تأكلوا مهما لم يذكر ك اسم الله عليه فذلك حرام، وكل مسكر حرام، والنكاف بالفريضة.

---

(1) البصر: النظر، S, P
(2) ذلك: +، S
(3) يسر بن: يسر، P
(4) نواح: النواح، O
(5) ولا يسربن: +، S
(6) +: +، S
(7) يتردقن: جردن، O
(8) يتفرعون: يظهرن، P
(9) تأكلوا: ياكلو، S
(10)  

---
والبيَّة"(1) وإذن الوليّ ورضى المرأة. ومُجانية نكاح من حقّ الله نكاحه من أهل تلك المنازل التي بنيها الله في كتابه، والطلاق بالشهوة، والإعادة على ستين الطلاق، ولا يتخذوا آيات الله حُرّواً، والميراث بفرائض القرآن، ولا يَيتوارثون(2).

أهلٌ ملتين.

١٦ - واجتناب الكذِّيب(3) يقول الزُّور وتواضعه من القول الذي لا يُغْنِي القائل به، فإن ذلك من حسن إسلام المرء، والتوثيق إلى الله من جميع الذَّنوب والحطاب، والإعاق عن ذلك، والنذارة عليه، والتبدُّل به إحساناً ومعروفاً، والشهادة على من ضل بضلالته، والخلع له، والبراءة منه، والبغضاء له، والعداوة، إلاّ ما وسع الله في ذلك من التقية في غير إظهار بالدعوة، والولاية لأهل الطاعة على الطاعة، والحُبُّ لهم، والخوف لغينتهم ما خُفِّي الله، والعون لهم على السُّر، والتقوى كما أمر الله، وِلا تعاونوا على الإثم والعُدْوَان...(5). واتقوا الله فيما أمر به وفي عنقه، ومراقبته في سير ذلك وجهره. واعلموا أن الله يعلم ما في أنفسكم فاحذروه. وتطهير القلوب من حقيدها وحسينها، وتنزيله اللدن عن مكروهها، وعصبان النفس في شر(6) ما تأمِّر به، وصدقها عن سبيلها وما فيه رذالها، وذبائحها عن مراتعها، وتنبيهيها من غفلتها وسهوها(7)، ورفعها عن ذلك إلى معلَّم(8) الإسلام، ومكارمه ومنازل العالِميين بالغالابة في حب الله(9)، وفيه يُباح(10) بنعمته لاجتماع فيها على طاعته.
17 - وإقامة الحق والقول بِهِ للهِ لا لغيرهِ، وَبِعَزْهُ، وجعلهُم في حرَّهُ، وهداهم بالنور، وَوَطْهَ (1) العلم المثِّلِاءَ، والولاية، وَالكِتَانَة على سبيلهم، ومعرفة فضلهُم الذي فضَّلهُم الله، وَتَضَلُّ مِن سِيَاهٍ من أئمة الضلالِ وقِيادة الفتنة، والفرقُ لهُم على مَعْصِيَة الله، والنصيحة لله في عباده فيما حِيَلَهُا فيه وعَمُّوا وأزَعَوها عن سبيل رشاد وقول سَاد. والتذكير لهُم والتحذير بِتدْكِيرهم الله وِحِيده، والذِّي جاءت بهِ رَسُل اللهُ عَلَى عُدْرًا ونَدْرًا، والنصيحة لِعَامِمة المسلمين بالحكمة والموظَّفة الحسنة، يُذْهَبون مَن أدَب، ويَقِلُون مَن أَبِل.

18 - وَقِيَالٌ مَن كَذَّب بِيَوْمِ الْخَيْرِ، وَبِعِيِّ على أهل الدين من بعد بَعْوَ الدعَوَة إِلَى (1،) وِتَخَذَ الحُجْجَة عَلَيْهِ (2). لا نَهاية لِقِيَال أَهْل التكذيب حتى يَؤْمِنُوا بالله، ولا (1) أَهْل الْبَعِيْضَة، حَتَّى يَقْبَلُوا إِلَى أَمَر الله، وَتَغيَّر أَثَار الظَّلَّة وما أَحْبَدُوا من مَنْكَر وَابتَدَعوا وَسَتَوا (3) من ضَلَّال وَشَرَعوا خِلافاً عَن أَمَر الله وَكَذَا عَلَى الله. والرَّد على مِن قَال: لا قَدُرَ، وَنَازَعَ الله في سُلطانه، وأنَّ الأمور مُفْوَظة إِلَى العباد، وَعَلِيِّ من ادْعَى (4) الإيمان بالقول دون العمل (5)، وعلى مِن سَبَّى أَهْل التوحيد والإِدَّار المُشْرِكين، وَعَلِي أَهْل التَّشِيَّبة والتحديد، وَعَلِي مِن قَال بِالرُؤِيَة وأَبْطَل (6) الوعيَّد، وَعَلِي مِن زَعِمَ أنَّ أَهْل المعاصي (7) من أَهْل الإِقْلِيم يَدْخُلُونَ.

(1) Wāṭeˈ: Wāṭeˈ، O
(2) ۛIléal: Ulábi، O
(3) وِتَخَذَ الحُجْجَة عَلَيْهِ: ۡۖۖ، P
(4) ولا: ﮟـِـِـ، P
(5) ﻓَــثْوَ: ﻓَــثْوَ، S
(6) أَدَعَٰ: ادْعَا، O
(7) ﺒــاً: ﺒــاً، S
(8) أَبْطَل: أَبْطَل، O
(9) أَهْل المعاصي: ﮟـِـِـ، P
The Sīrah to the People of Khurāsān

55

In the garden of heaven, the blessed ones will be gathered, and the wicked will be sealed into Hell. This is the trick, the lie.

19-1 and the clean line from the path of Islam, and the guidance. The proofs and the clear signs. And the testing, and the testing. And the war, and the war. And the multipliers, and the multipliers. And the reward, and the reward. And the exploration of the things, and the exploration of the things. And the exploration of the things, and the exploration of the things.
الوقوف عند الشهادات، والأخذ بالبيانات النباتات، وطلب علم ما لا عذر

بوجههم (1)، والعلم والعمل بما علم الله، وآباؤه ما هدى الله (2)، والاتساع بما وسع الله في دينه، والأخذ بما تيسر (3)، وما من الله به من رحمته فيما أرادة لعبادة

بالبصيرة (4)، وما جعل هم فيه العذر، وإظهار النعمة والثناء على الله بما، ومعرفته لحا، والشكر عليها. وترك الخيانة ووضع الفخر والكبر، ومجالبة أخلاق الكفر في العلانية والسر، والنزول عند العلم (2) على الله، وعلى أهل دينه، والاستكانة له والتواضع وحسن السمة والتخشيع، وإظهار الرغبة إليه بالتضرع، والتعظيم للقول على الله من الحك وما لا يعلمون. ولا يسقف الله بغير حفره، ولا يعتل مؤمن ولا يعان على فتله (5)، ومن يقتل مؤمنا معددا فحزاوه جهنم حاددا فيها وغضب الله عليه وعنة وأعد الله عذابا عظيما (6) ।

وقف الرأس وقص الشراب، والسواك والمضمضة والاستنشاق، وتتنفض الإبط وقص الأظافر وحلق العانة، والجبان والاستنجاء من آثر البول والغائط، وتحريم ما حر الله في حريمه وعلى المؤمنين من بني (7) بيتها في حين ذلك، ووقته إلى منتهى (8) الإحلال منه، واجتناب ما يهى الله عنه مهاكم من الوقت والفسوق

(1) ما لا عذر له بوجههم: يجهالته علم ما لا، P، S، O.

(2) والآباء ما هدى الله: +، P، S، O.

(3) والاتساع بما وسع الله في دينه، والأخذ: -، P، O.

(4) بالبصيرة: البشر، P، S، O.

(5) العلم: العلم، O.

(6) أهل دينه: أهل نبيه، O.

(7) إظهار: أطهار، O.

(8) أعد الله عذابا عظيما: جهنم وسأت مصر، P، S، O.

(9) حج: حاج، O.

(10) منتهي: مثلها، O.

In Ibadite theology the term ahl al-bayt (Holy Home) is usually believed to include all Muslims, in contrast the term comprises in Shiite ideology the Prophet’s relatives, especially his grandsons al-Hasan and al-Husayn. For more details on this issue, see al-Sālimī, ‘A., Mashāriq anwār al-‘uqūl, 41.
والجدال في الحج، في مبادرة وحسن هدايَّة وذكَّر الله كثيرًا، والانتهاء عن لَمْعَة المؤمنين والطعن عليهم، والغيبة لهم وسوء ظن بهم، والتجسس لعمماثهم، والأذى لهم بغير ما أمكنوا، ذلك الذي يُحيط الله به الأعمال، ويحتمل به الآنام والبهتان، وصير بأهله إلى الخسارة. وتادية حقوق المؤمنين إليهم، ومن الحفظ المودة والاستغفار لهم في المحسوب والممات، وبذلك فضل بين المؤمنين، وعليه(1) ألف بين قلوبهم.

21 - وتجريم ولاية أهل المعصية، واستبصار القلوب من محببِه واستغفارهم، وما لم يحرم الله(2) المؤمنين من القول في النثوية، حيث يقول: "إلا أن تُتقوا نذيرًا..." (3: 28)، وقال: "إلا أن تُتقوا نذيرًا..." (16: 1). فأما الفعل فلا يجوز. والمماراة والقتال لأصناف أهل المعاصي، الذين أمر الله فيهم بالطهارة(3) بذلك. من أهل الشرك وأهل الإحداث في الإقرار من أهل القبلة، وتسميتها بأسمائهم ومليئهم التي سامعت الله بها ونسبهم إليها، وفرق فيما بينهم، وإنساغ هُجوم الله فيهم، وإقامة حُكم الله عليهم؛ لأنهم(4) دون ذلك. ولا تطيل لحِبٍّ وجِب على أهل، حرام عليه(5) ولا أمر تعطيله، وحَتى على معرفة أهل الحق القائمين به إقامتهم على من وجب عليهم من أنفسهم وأعوانهم في شدد تغبط إليهم ومباذة هم كما أمر الله فيهم، فمن رضي بحكم المسلمين وأقر بدينه وتنب، فيلست توبته، ولحم يُطيل التوبة عليه حدة ما وجب(6) عليه، ووسع المسلمين مجامعته، فإن أصر واستكر أقومهم عليه حدة ما ركب، لا يُعتمد عليه غير ذلك وبرئ:

وعليه(1) ألف: الف.

P, S, O

(2) وما لم يحرم الله على المؤمنين: وما حرم الله، P, O, S, O

(3) بالمماراة: P, O

(4) لأنهم: لا.G, S, O

(5) على: ولا، P, S, O

(6) وجب: ركب، P, O
المسلمون منه على جدته، وامتناعه وإصراره لما كان على ذلك. ومن عطل حدًا أو قصر عنه بعد القدرة والسبيل إلى إقامته العمل به، كفره(1) تعطيل ما عطّل من الحدود(2) الbite(3). أمر الله ولادة الأمر بإقامتها على من أقر بما وصّت عليه، وأعلق الله ذلك أهلاً، وجعل الله عليه السلطان، ولم يكن له مسًّ دون الله ولي ولا تصير، حتى يرجع إلى إقامة ما كان(1) أكثره تعطيله. وقال:

«لا تتخذوا الكافرين أولياء من دون المؤمنين أثريون(4) أن تجعلوا ي تعمل له عليه عليكم سلطانًا مبينًا(5)» (4: 44). وذلك حق الله(1) أمر أن يعمال به في عباده، لا ترك لذلك ولا خلاف على الله(6) فهي، لأن الله أثبت الولاية والاستغفار والعودة لاهل الطاعة، وحَرّم أموالهم ودعاءهم وأعراضهم وجعل ذلك عندده عظيماً، وذلك من حقوقهم الذي عليه والذي أدوا إليه من حقه(7).

22- حرّم ولاية المنافقين والاستغفار لهم ومَودّتهم، وأحل منهم النكاح، وأثبت الموازنة والحود والأحكام عليهم(8) إقرارهم. وإذا أثبت الإمام والولاية فين صدق في إقراره وعمل بما أقر به، وحرّم على المسلمين قَيْتَهُم ما داموا مُظهرين لهم الرضى بتلكهم وعملهم، وحق على من أقر حق أن يؤذن(9)، ولذلِك على من دان يتحرى أن يبقيه، ولن يحولِهم إقراره إلى الإيمان ولا ثواب أهل(10) لأنهم

(1) كفره: أكثره، O.
(2) الحدود: الخد، O.
(3) البي: الذي، O.
(4) كان: +، S.
(5) أثريون: أثريون، O.
(6) الله: على الله، O.
(7) S.
(8) على الله: على الله، O.
(9) P.
(10) من حقوقهم الذي عليه والذي أدوا إليه من حقه: من حقوقهم للذي عليه أدوا إليه من حقه S.

P.
دخلوا في الإسلام بغير صدق أهله، فهم يمشون في ضوئيه ويعيشو في كنفه بغير صدق ولا رغبة، فهم خاضرون لمخادعتهم الله وأولياءه، ومظاهرتهم على الله من عصاه، وما يجدون إلا أنفسهم وما يشعرون. فإن امتنعوا بحق الله بعد إقرارهم به، طلب إليهم ذلك الحق أن يطبعوه، فإذا امتنعوا، فإذا ردوا مثله عليهم من المسلمين قوتلوا على أمر الله؛ لأن الله أمر بقتل أهل البغي، وأنزل في ذلك قرآناً، فقال: 

{الله يبتغوا على المسلمين قُوتلوا على أمرِ الله؛ لأنّ الله أمرَ بقتالِ أهلِ البَغيِ، وأنزلَ في ذلكَ قُرننا ، فقالَ:  

﴿وَإِنْ طَائِفَتَنَا مِنِّي الْمُؤْمِنِينَ اقْتَتَلُوا فَأَصْلِحُوا بَينْهُمَا فَإِنْ بَغَتَ إِحْنَادُهُمَا عَلَى الأُخْنَادِ بَغِيَّةٌ فَقَاتَلُوا الَّذِينَ يُعَدُونَ أَنْفُسَهُمْ وَالَّذِينَ يُعَدُونُهُمُ اللّهُ وَأَوْلَادُهُمْ بَغِيَّةٌ﴾} (19:9)

، وهني أن ترجع إلى ما طلب إليها فإني امتنعت به، فصاروا بالامتناع عما قبَلَهُم مين حقّ بُغاة، حلال دماؤُهم بما استحلوا من دماء المسلمين وقتالهم، وانتق الإيمنان عنهم، والناكث على نفسه نكث، والمُغيِّر نَكَثَ، والمُغيِّر نِعمتَهُ مُغَيِّرٌ، والماكير بنفسه مَكَرَ.

32- وبلغنا أن ذلك القتال الذي ذَكَرهُ الله كان بالأيدي والنَّعال، لا بالسلاح، فعظَم الله ذلك، وبلغ هم ما تسمعون، وسأَلمُهم باعيين بامتناعهم بما قيلهم من الحق، وأخل قتالهم فيه حتى يرجعوا إلى أمر الله الذي كانوا مَقْرِينُ(6) له في بادئ (1) أمْرِهِم. فكيف من سُفَكَ الدَّماءَ عِدَّواتاً وظلمًا، وانتهاك (1) المَحَارِم، وسعى في الأرض فسادًا، واغتصب أموال الناس (11)، وتُبَرَّ أمن في الإسلام إلى أهل البَغيِ، وأنزل في ذلك قرآناً، فقال: 

(1) امتنعوا: امتنعوا به، O
(2) فامتنعت: فامتنعت به، O
(3) عما: بما، P
(4) القتال: ، P
(5) الغال: البغاء، S
(6) بالسلاح: بالسلاح كان، O
(7) تسمعون: ينغمون، S
(8) مَطْرِينَ: معزون، O
(9) بادي: يدي، P
(10) انتهاك: أفلك، O
(11) أموال الناس: الناس أموالهم، O
تمتع تولاهم؟
فَالنّذير مُؤمنين واعادًا له، مطيعًا بذلك الله محترساً بدعوته. وهم بذلك بعضهم من بعض،
العمل بالمعصية المُقيَّمٍ عليها، والراضي بها، والمعين عليها، والموالي بذلك عليها
بما اجتمعوا عليه من معصية الله، وهم في الآخرة في العذاب مُشتركون. فمن
رضي بمعصية الله أو أُعذر عليها غيره في بلايتها شارك العمل في حرامها، ومن
تولى كُل ذلك فله عذاب أليم.
وهُم جهيل الحق لم يزدّ به جهيله إلا جهيلًا،
ومن جحيله إلا تفًا، ومن مواطئه إلا وحلاً، ومومن كان في هذه أعمى فهُو
في الآخرة أعمى وأصل سبيلاً (17:21).
2- وكانت سيرة نبي الله صلى الله عليه وسلم في البُغاة أن يقاتلوها على ما
أخذوا من بَغيِّهم وأقاموا عليه من جُوُرهم، حتى يرجعوا إلى الحَقّ فيعظموه، ولا
يتعالى بهم ذلك إلى غيره. وَكانت سيرته في اليهود والنصارى والمجوس أن
ذهابهم إلى الذي يجتذبونه في كتاب الله من كلمة العدل: ألا لا يعُدُّوا إلا الله ولا
يُشركوا به شيئًا، ويحتسبوا ما خَافُهم الله عنه من الرِّجَس والمُنكري والقول بالزور،
وأن يضعع عنهم الأغلال التي كانت عليهم والأصفاد، ولا يدعون مسّ الله إلهاً.
آخر، ثم قال: "فإن أسلموا فقد اهتدوا..." (2: 10، 137). فمن استجاب له منهم وجمع له ما وجب للمسلمين، وحلله ما حلهم، ومن كرة الإسلام أمره بقتاليهم ... حتى يعترفوا الجزية عن يد وهم صاغرون" (9: 29)، فمن أقر منهم بالجزية أقر على دينه. وأحل الله من أهل الكتاب من اليهود والنصارى أصل ذبائحهم ونكاح المختلسات من نسائهم، وحرم على المسلمين ذبائح المهوسون ونكاحهم. وإذا كان الله من الكبائيين الدبائح والنساء ما لم يكونوا حربيا، فإذا كانوا حريحا حرم ذلك كله منهم، وأحلت على المناصبة وما أعشاهم وغزيمة أموالهم، وسيبي نسائهم وذراريهم الذين ولدوا في محايريتهم.

25- ومن كان من مشركى العرب فإن الله أحل دماؤهم وأموالهم واستعراضهم وصدحتهم عن المسجد الحرام، وحرم (1) موارثتهم ومنا دحتمهم وأكل ذبائحهم، وأمر ألا (2) يقروا على دينهم ولا تقبل منهم خديجة ولا جزية إلا الدخول في الإسلام أو ضرب أعنافهم. فهذه سيرة نبي الله صلى الله عليه وسلم في هذه الأديان (3)، وسار بما أصله العدل بعدئ (4). سنتة ناملة ماضية ثابتة في الدين يعمل بها خلقه الله في أرضه القائمون بحقه، لا يغضبوا (5) ولا يتعذرونها، وله تجد لنسبه الله نبديلا. وكل العباد قد أعذر الله إليه وأقام حجته عليه، البالذي أتاه به من الإبان والهدى والفرقة والنور والبرهان على ألسن رسله وهمداً من عباده، ولا ريب في ذلك ولا جهل، ولا لبس عن ذي عقل، قد فصله الله
لا، وجَعلَ على كل شيء منته دليلاً. فَمَن أسلمَ وجهه مَحتسباً، وأقبل إلى رَبَّه مَنْبِباً بَرِياً مِنْ ذُنْبِهِ، استوجب أَجره عند رَبِّه، وسُمِّي بالذي سُمِّي، وكانت له حَرمةٌ ذلك وحقه في إخاء الإسلام وحَقوقه الَّي أَجَراها الله بين أهله.

26- وليس الإسلام ليمن تسمى به واتنحَّل به غَيْر الصدق أهله، ولكنه من حافظ عليه واستكمله، وكان منه على طرائقه المستقيمة بأخلاقه العظيمة على مراتبَ الكَرَمَة المبلغ بما إليه للوصول بما لديه، مع مُجانَبة الخيانة، وأداء الأمانة، ورفض الأشار من البطانة، وما يَضيع العبد بإضاعته، وطاعة أهل الخيانة من بطانة، [حيث] يستدرج العبد من حيث لا يعلم، ويتَحشر في غيسب ذلك ويندم، ويَحبط عنه العمل، ويَرجح منه في المَنْتَلب العَلَل ما أثبت العدل، ويَحَل به المَقْتُ الكبير، ويسير بما إلى أهل التَحَشَر، ف النساء قدِيلاً، ويسير للظلماء بِذَلَا، من أمر جَلَف ما أظهر، وانتقَض من حق الله ما به على نفسه أقرّ، كل ذلك بعلم الله ومعرفته، والأمر بتمامه وعاقبته.

27- والناس في إقرارهم بِدِين الله على مَنازل، مختلف في عَدَل الله مَن ولاية وبراءة ووفقهم لا يجاوز ذلك فيهم، وهو العدل في دين الله، وعلى الحق، وحَافِظ عليه، وأول من عليه عمَل الله ﷺ في عباده أن يَنزل فيهم حيث أنزلت له، حيَاة الإسلام، وجعله على مَن 1.) قام بأمر الله في عباده أن يَنزل له، حيث أنزلت له أعمالهم.

---

1. ذنبه: وديه، O
2. حرمة: خدمته، P
3. بغير: بعير، O
4. طرائقه: أمر الله، O
5. يضيع: يناع، O
6. بإضاعته: +، S
7. عنه: فيه، O، منه، S
8. أهل: +، S
9. قبله: مثلا، S
10. عدل: -، O
11. من: ماء، O
وُسَمِّيَهُم بِذوائِمهم، وتَجَرَّب عليهم أَحْكَامهم علَى قُدُور منازلهم. فَإِن مَن أَثَبَنَ في النَاس اَسماً، أو أَجْرَى علَيهم حُكماً قَبْل أن يَعْرَف منازلهم فِي بَيْنِها أَخْطأَ وعَتَّدى، وَمَن أَنَزلَهم منزلة مِن لَم يَقُولوا قُوَّة وَيُعَصُّوا فِي عَلَيْهِم جَاحر وظَلَم، ذلـك أَمْرُهم في الدُنيا، وَكَذلـك في (1) الآخرة عَبْد الله بِكَلّ درجات مِنها عَمِلوا وَهُم لَا يَظْلَمُون. قَالَ الله: «فَأَعْطَيْهِمْ نَفَاقًا فِي قُلوبهِم إِلَى يَوْم يَلْقَوْنَهُ بِمَا أَخَنَّفُوا اللَّهُ مَاتَهُمْ وَبِمَانَا كَانُوا يَكْنَذُون» (9: 77). فَسَمَّاهُم الله بذلك مُنافقيين، وَبِالفسوقِ عَمَرَهُم سَمَّاهم فاسقين. وَالكَفْرُ يَجْمَع أَهْلَ الشُّرْكِ وأَهْلَ الْإِحْدَاثِ فِي الإِقْرَارِ مِن أَهْلِ الْقِبَلَة، وَهُمَّ كَفْران: كَفْرُ شَرْكٍ قَد لَجَقَهُم فيه حُكُم المُشريِّن، وَكَفْرُ بالآدابِ، وَهُمُ منافقون دَخَلَوْا بالإِقْرَارِ مِن ثَلَاثِ الأَبْاب الأَعْظَم، وَخَرَجَوْا مِن النَفَقِ الأَصْغر بِتَضْيِع مَا أَمَرُوهُم اللَّهُ بهِ مِن طَاعَتِهِ ضَعِيدًا، وَوَرَكَّب مَا نَاخَاهُم اللَّهُ عَنْهُ مِن حُرُمَاتِهَا، فَهَذَا كَفْرُ أَهْلِ الإِقْرَارِ مِن حُكُمَ بِغَيْرَ مَا أَنْزَل اللَّهُ وَتَولِّيهم عَمَرَهُم بِأَمرِ اللَّهِ، قَالَ اللهُ لَهُ الحمد: «وَإِذ دُعُوا إِلَى اللَّهِ وَرَسُولِهِ لَيْحَنَّكُم بَيْنَهُم أَن يَقُولُوا سَمِيعنَا وَأَطْعَنَا وَأُولَئِكَ هُم المُفْلِحُون» (2: 28-51). فَبِالكَفْرِ دَخَلَ أَهْل النَّارِ، وَبالإِسْمَاعِ دَخَلَ أَهْلَ الجَنَّة. (28) والإِسْمَاعِ (1) مِن الإِيمانِ، وَالإِسْمَاعِ مِن الإسلامِ، وَالْتَقُوَى مِن الإِيمانِ، وَيَعْقِلُ ذلـك مِن بعض علَى استِكْمَال الإِيمانِ بِمَا (1) فيه، وَإِيمان حُقُوقه وَالوقوف.

(1) ومن أَنْزَلَهم منزلة مِن لَم يَقُولوا قُوَّة وَيَعَصُّوا فِي عَلَيْهِم جَاحر وظَلَم، ذلـك أَمْرُهم في الدُنيا، وَكَذلـك في الآخرة: ومن أَنْزَلَهم منزلة الآخرة، P, S.
(2) من: في، O.
(3) الإسلام: الجَنَّة، P, S.
(4) إِبَّا: ماء، S, P.
على حدوده. ولا يثبت الإيمان بانتقاص فرائض الله، ولا بالمقام على حرام الله، هيهات هيهات مي ذلك، والكافرون هم الطالمون والفاسقون. وكفى بالعمل شاهدا على أهله، فيجسنه يحسن الثمان ويصلح، ويجيه (1) يسوي الشتاء ويقبله، وهو الذي يحكم الله به للعباد، وعليه وبه يعفر ويستب إليه، وعليه يوافق ويعادى، وذلك من أوثق عر_ai الإسلام وأثبت أركانه: الولاية في الله والعودة في الله. والله (2) أول من برئ من أهل المعصية وعادهم عليها، ثم أضى ذلك وأمر به فيهم، سنة تامة عند الله معمول بها الله. وإذا ولينا (3) من فوق ما عاهد عليه الله (4) في كل ما ألزم فيه طاعته، وحقيق أوجب على العباد تأديته، من تقوى (5) الله وورع عن حرماته. وعندنا الناكل بعوله إلى هواه وشهوه وهو غيب وفته، المستجل لما حرم الله، الآتي ما فتا الله عنه، استخفافًا بما أوعده ونقضا لما عاهد عليه الله، فآولن الاحلال خلعهم والبراءة منهم ما استحلوا الحرام، وركبوا من (6) الآثام، وما ركب بظلام للعباد.

29 - أهل المنزلتين بين المنزلتين دخلوا في الإسلام، فأتو بحُرَّمهم وأظهروا للمسلمين الراضي (1)، فإذا غابوا (2) أتى عليهم الذي [هوى عابيب في دينهم ووافق لولايتهم، من أعمال يتحالفون إليها حرم الله استحلالها، فإذا غويا اعتذروا، وإذا استغيثوا استغلوا، يظهرون الكراهية للعيوب والتهذيب من الذنوب، ثم يرجعون بعد

| بالنسبة: القيام: القيام، | (1) |
| P, S, P, P | (2) |
| بقيق: تقيقه، | (3) |
| O, O, P | (4) |
| O, P | (5) |
| P, P, P, P | (6) |
| P, O, O, O, O | (7) |
| P, P, P, O, O, O, O | (8) |
| P, P, O, O | (9) |
| O, O, P, O, O, O | (10) |
2.4 Translation

To those of the brethren who have written to us from the people of Khurāsān:

1- Peace be upon you, we praise God for you, there is no god but God. He is fair in His bounty, kind in His justice, and wise in His acts. He has the most beautiful names, the highest praise, the wisest acts, and perfection in directing affairs. In His hand is the good; He is powerful over everything.
2- We advise you to fear God, who forbade you from having the characteristics of the hypocrites. He took a covenant from you to obey His commandments and avoid His prohibitions, testing and examining you thereby. So fear God and stand upright as He has commanded you. Remember death and the graves, the resurrection and the day of judgment, a day “when those who were followed disown their followers” (2:166), and the evildoers bite their hands in grief for what they have done. They will be enemies to erstwhile friends, with the exception of those who feared God.

3- We wrote to you out of kindness, for the exaltation of your honour and the increase of your righteousness. We and the Muslims around us are under the protection of God. Our desire is to ensure the harmony among you, and [you] deserve it [and] you belong to us. We ask God to complete and increase His favour upon you. All praise is for God, the Lord of all beings, and may the praise of God be upon Muḥammad.

4- If someone asks: Tell me about someone who was under the bond of Muslim association until he disappeared or died and then two witnesses of the Muslims, acknowledged and experts of their doctrine, acquainted with the stipulations of association and dissociation, testified against him after his death that he had sinned against the faith and refused to repent until he died, and we did not know whether he had repented of sinning: would Muslims accept their testimony against their ruler after his death on the basis of the rule that proof dies along with people when they die?

5- We say, and power comes only from God: If the candidate was one of the imams chosen by Muslim scholars to govern the state and [they] confirmed his rule in obedience to the Lord and surrendered to his rule and consented to associate with him, or if he was one of the religious imams who were famous for their kindness to Muslims, and scholars gave him a pledge to obey God and gave him the responsibility to govern them and their affairs and agreed upon his legitimate ruling, such as ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb, ‘Abd Allāh b. Mas‘ūd, Jābir b. Zayd, Julandā b. Mas‘ūd, Rabī’ b. Ḥabīb, Maḥbūb b. al-Raḥīl, Mūsā b. ‘Alī, Muḥammad b. Maḥbūb, as well as those who were like them but not mentioned.

Even if a group of witnesses – and even if they were many – were to bear witness against those people or against someone among them after his death that he had turned against his faith and insisted on it and did
not repent till he died, Muslims do not accept that. In this case, Muslims should dissociate from the witnesses and ask them to repent for what they have said. If the witnesses repent, they have the right to return to their previous position in the Muslim community, but if they insist on what they have testified before, then the Muslims should continue dissociating from them. If people testified against one of the Imams mentioned above from the Muslims during his lifetime, they would not accept this from him and dissociate from him and ask him to repent. If he repents, Muslims may accept him, but if he insists on not repenting, they should continue their dissociation from him.

6- Similarly the evildoing imams, whose sins were notorious within the Muslim community, and the Muslims consented to dissociate from them such as Mu'āwiyyah b. Abī Sufyān and 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ as well as others like them who are not mentioned. Even if a hundred Muslims, or a little more or less, bore witness that they had repented before death and renounced their evil deeds and that thereupon the Muslims had associated with them again, then Muslims would not accept this testimony from them, and they must dissociate from them and ask them to repent. If they repent, then they will be accepted back into the Muslim community, but if they insist on their testimony, then the Muslims should dissociate from them as well as from those who were heretical imams.

7- Association with those mentioned among the religious imams is something customarily inherited and is famous among Muslims. It is an issue that has already been debated among Muslims.

The testimony of the witnesses is not accepted in either of these two aspects, particularly since it contains the accusation of lying against those who came before. Nobody must accuse your authorities (aʾimmah) [after their death], and then invalidate your allegation which you once made, thereby dissociating from your [unrighteous] opponents. No one could bring something different from what they have said.

8- Suppose there is one who is considered to have been in association with the Muslim community until he disappeared or died, and then two witnesses who are knowledgable in respect of association and dissociation, bear witness against him, either when he is away or after he has died, that he had committed something against the faith and insisted on it and no one knew whether he had repented before his
death. The duty should be that the people who accepted him accept the testimony against him and dissociate from him.

If Muslims did not dissociate from someone against whom they accepted testimony after his death about his sins which led him to unbelief, they would have to forgive all the people who are from your community [and associated with ‘Uthmān and ‘Alī] after the death of Mu‘āwiyah and ‘Amr b. al-Āṣ. This is because they would say to you: “You and your opponents consented that in fact they were in obedience to God, so we associated with them because you had agreed on that.” On the other hand, if you proved that they have committed sins, they would say: “We do not accept your proof, because they are already dead or their evidence died with them.” Likewise, if you forgive those Muslims for accepting them after establishing the proof against them, then the affair has become worse and your claim becomes invalid for which you had dissociated from people who went astray with sinners. If you overcome their arguments and dissociate from them, then you refute your own statement that the testimony of witnesses against somebody who had died is not accepted after his death.

I have heard from one of the Muslims that ‘Azzān b. Ṣaqar said: “If a man was living in Iraq and had heard of ‘Alī b. Abī Ṭālib’s virtues, but not his sins, he would have been likely to accept him. If another man bears witness that ‘Alī b. Abī Ṭālib committed sins, then he has to dissociate from the witness. But, if there are two witnesses, he has to dissociate from ‘Alī b. Abī Ṭālib.” This establishes that one must dissociate from ‘Alī after his sinning was proven by legitimate proof after his death. ‘Azzān b. Ṣaqar was an Omani scholar and we depend on him for this issue.

9- On the genealogy of Islam. God is our Lord, Muḥammad is our Prophet, the Qurʾān is our guidance, the sacred house is our direction for prayer, and Islam is our religion. Islam is faith and faith is Islam. Piety and righteousness (taqwā) are from faith and fealty (wafâ’, birr) is from faith. All these together are complementary with faith, and [these parts] establish its delineation and righteous practice. Faith is not achieved through disobedience to God’s commands or through continuing in doing what God has forbidden.

10- Faith is the confession that there is no god but God, and that Muḥammad is His Prophet and that the revelations that Muḥammad received from God are true. Faith is in God, the day of resurrection, the
angels, the book, the apostles, the paradise and the fire, and that the final hour is upcoming and that there can be no doubt about it and that God will raise up all who are in their graves. Do good and command it, and avoid evil and prohibit it, in accordance with God’s commands and prohibitions that God laid out clearly in His book and ordained in a righteous and true manner.

11- Faith is to perform regular prayer on time, day and night. Prayer must be performed with its kneelings and bowings and full cleanliness and purity. It also must begin with takbīrat al-iḥrām (1) and end with taslīm. (2) All this is done with submissiveness and acquiescence. It is also necessary to pray in the congregation. When praying, it is prohibited to supplicate qunūt, (3) saying amen (āmīn). (4) Nor may one merely wipe the tops of the covered feet instead of washing the feet in the wuḍū’. It is permissible while on a journey to be excused from performing the full prayer, and travellers who wish to combine the prayers are allowed to do so. The Friday congregational prayer is to be conducted in the amṣār mumaṣṣara (5) and with the imams of justice in other places. (6) This prayer is a duty upon all resident (muqīm) people who have attained puberty. All this includes the prayers of fiṭr, (7) naḥr, (8) and the prayer at the burial service of the people of the qibla (i.e. Muslims) after washing their bodies, wrapping them in shrouds, and

---

(1) It means a prayer of prohibition or consecration, because it prohibits the worshipper from saying or doing anything extraneous in the prayer. The prayer begins with Allāh akbar (God is most great). See EI, s.v. “Takbīr”.

(2) The prayer ends with al-salām ‘alaykum wa-raḥmat Allāh (peace be upon you and the mercy of God). EI, s.v. “Salām”.

(3) Qunūt is done at the end of the prayer service, when the worshipper raises his hands to the height of his chest, with palms towards heaven, and offers a supplication. In these supplications, the worshipper may use his own words and is not bound by prescribed formulae. The Ibāḍīs do not consider the qunūt to be part of the prayer; EI, s.v. “Qunūt”.

(4) Usually this word is said after reading Sūrah al-Fāṭiḥah. Ibāḍī opinion forbids the mention of this word in prayer, because it is a human word, not revealed by God; EI, s.v. “Āmīn”.

(5) There were seven towns that were known as the capital cities of the Islamic state. They were chosen by ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb after Islam spread beyond Arabia; these cities were: Mecca, Medina, Basra, Damascus, Kufah, Yemen (Ṣan‘ā’), Egypt (al-Fusṭāṭ), and Sohar; al-Bisyāwī, Jāmiʿ, 2: 149.

(6) It may not be performed in the open air, in tents, or out of town, but only in a mosque within a town, or in a decent prayer house.

(7) The first day of Shawwāl.

(8) 10 Dhū al-Ḥijjah.
burying them. There is no prayer after dawn until the sun rises, and there is no prayer after the afternoon prayer until the sun sets, except for the prayer of redemption or the burial prayer.

12- Faith also necessitates the giving of regular alms: *zakāt* from the various kinds of known properties specified\(^{(1)}\) [by God]. These kinds of *zakāt* should be given according to the duties towards God and the *sunna* of His Prophet: on time, regular in a good manner and precise.

It should be given to those who observe God’s ordainance, to those who respect God and judge according to His justice and distribute [it] in equity and practise justice among the people and do not practise injustice towards God and towards His rules. And these are the people of authority in these matters assigned to distribute it. [In contrast to this are people] who take hold of it without being entitled or deposit it with people who have no right in it and dispose of it in contradiction to the distribution wanted by God and in contrast to His justice and use the *zakāt* for themselves or for their relatives, or achieve through it their personal desires, or reserve it for their next of kin [lit.: those who paid them obedience and are related with them], whom God has not given an allocated share of the *zakāt*. If there is no just Imam or if the Imamate is in the hand of unjust rulers, the people who are eligible to pay the *zakāt* should give it themselves to the specified people who need it.

13- Fasting throughout the month of Ramaḍān and the practice that is prescribed in the *sunna*, are also part of faith. This means establishing all the other essential duties of fasting, and the things by which God is remembered, such as abstinence, forbearance, piety, and renunciation are also part of faith. *Zakāt al-abdān* (the alms of body) is also a duty,\(^{(2)}\) which is one *ṣāʿ*\(^{(3)}\) of what is used for food by each person [in the family], young or old, free or enslaved, man or woman. Pilgrimage to the Sacred House, for those who are able, is also part of faith.

[Faith also means] treating parents well, and maintaining ties with people with whom God has commanded contacts should be maintained:

---

\(^{(1)}\) The following goods or earnings are subject to the *zakār*: 1) animals, such as camels, bovines (oxen, cows, and buffalo), sheep, and goats, 2) a tenth of the fruits from the field, 3) money, gold, and silver, 4) 2.5% of merchandise, and 5) minerals and buried treasures; *EI*, s.v. “Zakā.”

\(^{(2)}\) The distribution of alms at the feast of Fiṭr on 1 Shawwāl is obligatory for every Muslim, as is the distribution of alms during the fasting of Ramaḍān.

\(^{(3)}\) A kind of measure of weight; *EI*, s.v. “Ṣāʿ”.
kinfolk, neighbours, companions, and wayfarers, and in addition to these those belonging to your household. It also means giving what is due to the people to whom God gives rights in the faith, and ranking people according to their good and evil behavior, and dissociation and association from them and with them according to this. With this in mind, do not become friends or give loyalty except to those who fear God and believe in Him, otherwise this would be the way of those who disobey God, and “thou shall find no changing the wont of God.” (33:62).

14- And [faith means] lowering the gaze, protecting the private parts, removing the self from what is forbidden by God, and disavowing such things. Moreover, it includes covering what God commands His servants to cover, and what He taught His servants. God commands women to cover in a different manner than men. God commands women to remain in their homes and to draw their veils over their ornaments, and not to stamp their feet to attract attention to their hidden ornaments, with the exception of that which appears naturally thereof, things whose appearance is neither forbidden nor shameful. Such things include applying kohl to the eyes or wearing a ring on the finger. Any woman who displays a bracelet on her arm, an earring in her ear, an anklet on her ankle or any other (prohibited) body part, except her face and her hands, to anyone except a male attendant of her kin (mahram)\(^1\) is disobedient to her Lord until she repents of her sin.

Women should not tattoo others, nor be tattooed themselves; they should refrain from separating their teeth (for reasons of beautification); they should not wear false hair or attach false hair to others. Women should not (overly) mourn at their misfortunes, slap their cheeks, scratch their faces, lament or be lamented, for some who hear such lamenting derive pleasure from it. Women should not take off their veils except in the company of those men they are prohibited to marry (mahram), nor be naked except with their husbands. Women should not be approached (for sexual relations) during their monthly courses until they are purified by means of ghusl, or ritual bathing, thus ending their state of ritual impurity.

15- And [faith means] not to enter the houses of other people without first asking for permission. The name of God should be invoked when offering a sacrifice, and meat that has been sacrificed without the

---

\(^1\) A person who is illegal for the woman to marry; *Et*, s.v. “Maḥram”.
mention of God’s name should not be eaten. That is forbidden. All fermented or intoxicating drinks are also forbidden. Marriage should be undertaken with a dowry, a witness, permission of the guardian, and the consent of the woman. Men should keep away from marrying women who are forbidden by God in His book. Divorce should be in the presence of witnesses, and includes the ‘iddah.\(^1\) Do not take God’s verse in jest. With regard to inheritance, it should be administered as explained in the verses of the Qur’ān. The law of inheritance states that there is no inheritance between different religions.

16- [It is faithful] to avoid lies, false testimony, and similar words and sayings that are of no benefit to the speaker; all this is considered to demonstrate the excellence of an individual’s religion. Repentance to God of all sins and shortcomings necessitates that the penitent does not return to the sin committed, that he regrets having committed the sin, and that he makes good for his sin with a better state of being and goodness. It is the duty of every Muslim to bear testimony against people who stray from the right path, to exclude them from the community, to dissociate from them, and to bear enmity and hatred for them, except for what God allowed through concealing [it] and not making manifest in public.

One should associate with the people of obedience, loving them, treating them respectfully, protecting their families and property during their absence as God would guard them, you should help them in a pious manner as God commanded: “Do not help each other to sin and enmity.” (5:2) Fear God in the things He commands you to do or prohibits you from doing; be respectful of that in private and in public, and know that God knows what is in your hearts, so be fearful of Him. Also, purify your heart from envy and rancour and your tongue from false words. Moreover, disobey your self when it commands sinful things and divert yourself from desire and lusts that cause it to perish. Keep yourself away from the places of lust, remind yourself not to be heedless and neglectful, raise yourself to the moral rules and ethics of Islam. The ranking of people is by their striving to love God; therefore, it is necessary to join together in goodness by His grace.

17- [It is faithful to] do the right and say the right for God’s sake only as one is able to do, and to follow the ordinances of justice and the

---
\(^1\) The ‘iddah is the period of probation that designates the number of days a divorced or widowed woman has to wait before she is allowed to remarry; \(E^2\), s.v. “‘Idda”.

footsteps of the guided Imams whom God has strengthened with His power, protecting and guiding them with His light. People should seek established knowledge, associate with scholars, follow their path, and know the bounty that God has bestowed upon them. Conversely, avoid the other imams of error and the leaders of sedition; keep clear of them in their disobedience to God. Faith is to advise people against ignorance and blindness, and to caution against misguidance and bad speech. You should remind people and warn them to fear God with the teachings of His apostles, whether these teachings justify punishment or warn of impending doom. Encourage in Muslims [the sense of] wisdom and sincere preaching, convincing and inviting whomever turned away and whomever returned and accepted the religion.

18- [Faith also means to] fight those who deny the day of judgment and violate the right of the believers after they have been invited to embrace Islam, and you must not stop fighting the people who accuse you of lies until they believe in God and those who transgress until they comply with His commands. The traces and teachings of the evildoers should be changed in order to undo whatever evil they have created, whatever heretical doctrines they have advocated, and whatever errors they have introduced against God’s commands. You should refute the people who say that there is no predestination, arguing against God’s sovereignty and advocating man’s supremacy in everything and refute all those who assert that faith is in words rather than in deeds. Oppose those who call the people of monotheism (ahl al-tawḥīd wa-al-iqrār) polytheists, and people who assert anthropomorphism, people who believe in the visibility of God and dismiss His threats, and people who claim that those from the confessing monotheists (iqrār) who commit sins will eventually enter Paradise after they entered Hell. Indeed, God considers all of these people to be grave sinners, and for sinners there is nothing but error and loss.

19- [Faith also means] protecting and guarding the sanctity of Islam, according to necessity and ability. This duty is an order from God to the people of insight, to be taken upon oneself, and it is well known among the people of knowledge. There should be fighting in the cause of God until His word is exalted above all others and His command is firmly established. [Faith means] endurance in executing noble actions that God has commanded. However, it also means standing up firmly for
justice, including bearing witness between people, whether they be distant or near. The witnesses should not refuse when they are asked to give evidence and testify. A fair judgment between one man and another is a fulfilment of goodness. In contrast, there must be no obedience to those who disobey God; nor should any vows be taken which entail disobedience to God. No authority should be given to any judge who does not rule according to what God has sent down. Such people are unbelievers, wrongdoers, and rebels.

Establish the weight with justice, fill up the measure, permit trade, and forbid usury. Keep all of God’s prescriptions with regard to that which He has forbidden, except for those things that He allows in marriage, for nourishment, and to quench one’s thirst. Hold fast to these ordinances tenaciously. However, those aforementioned people of desires exceed the set limits in transgression and wrongdoing. God has promised them a swift penalty and fetters in this life and punishment on the Last Day.

20- [Faith means] the prohibition of usury and abstaining from doubtful things that have no basis in either the sunnah or āthār, and from obscure things that have neither been attested by God in His book nor in the sunnah of His Prophet and the excellent Companions. Such trade is not self-rewarding.

[Faith includes] avoiding suspicions, taking hold of clear signs, and seeking knowledge of the essentials of religion. Deeds should be executed following the guidance of God. Extend so far as God has extended his religion. Make use of His bounties, which are from His mercy to His servants in ease and simplicity. Worship and thank God. Muslims should avoid bad manners, arrogance, vainglory, and haughtiness. They should not adopt the behaviour of the disbelievers in private or in public.

Muslims should assent to the knowledge of God and the people of religion. They should submit to Him, be humble, honourable, and modest. Honour God by not saying anything without prior knowledge. Do not indulge in false suspicion and futile knowledge.

Do not shed blood, for injustice, killing a believer, or helping and supporting his killing is prohibited: “And whoso slays a believer wilfully, his recompense is Gehenna, therein dwelling forever, and God will be wroth with him and will curse him, and prepare for him a mighty chastisement” (4:93).
[Faith includes] combing the hair, clipping the moustache, cleaning the teeth, rinsing the mouth, snuffing water up the nose (istinshāq), removing the hair under the armpit, trimming the nails, shaving the pubic hair, circumcision, and performing ablution with istinjāʾ by cleaning oneself from the impurities of urine and excrement.

[Moreover, faith includes] avoiding what God has prohibited in His Sacred Realm. From the beginning until the end of pilgrimage, the pilgrim must shun what God has prohibited, such as obscenity, wickedness, and heated debate. The pilgrim must perform the sacrifice as well as mention and remember God throughout the performance of his pilgrimage. As a pilgrim, he should avoid winking at the believers, defaming them, backbiting them, thinking ill of them, spying on their private affairs, and hurting them without any cause. Such deeds lead to failure of good deeds and carry the burden of a manifest sin and lead the people who commit such acts to a real and evident loss. [Faith includes], fulfilling the rights of believers, offering them love and asking God to pardon and forgive them. As a result of this, God distinguishes between the believers and brings their hearts together.

21- [Faith forbids] association with the sinful; rather, hearts should be dissociated, [but faith also means respecting the fact] that God has not forbidden believers to claim that there are exceptions [for reasons of taqiyyah]. As He said, “unless you have a fear of them” (3:28), and He said, “excepting him who has been compelled, and his heart is still at rest in his belief” (16:106). With respect to manifest acts this [exception] is not permissible. [And faith commands] to separate them and to fight all categories of the sinful whom God has ordained to be fought against. And this comprises the polytheists and the sinful among the Muslims. And you should call them by the names and doctrines that God has called them, thereby differentiating between them. [Faith means] to execute God’s judgment and punishment upon them as these are issues of lesser significance (and do not necessitate fighting or going to war). There is no countermanding with respect to the execution of God’s punishment, and [even] authorities must not countermand it. The right thing to do is to apply the punishment to people from their family and entourage if the authority knows about God, whereby they are happy to apply it to them and give a warning, as God has ordained.
The repentance of people who are satisfied with the Muslim judgment and acknowledge their religion and feel repentance, is accepted, but this does not obliterate punishment, and God allowed to associate with them. However, if a man is obstinate and arrogant, punishment should be executed on him according to what he has wrongly done, and not more. The Muslims dissociate from him for his sin, obstinacy and denial.

Anyone in authority who interrupts or shortens a punishment although he has the faculty of applying it is a sinful person through interrupting the punishment that God has ordained the authorities to apply it to those who committed the sin and must be punished. And God will institute consequences – as he was able to apply the punishment and God had given him the power to it – and he is neither protected nor helped until he re-establishes and executes what he has hindered. God says, "[O believers,] take not the unbelievers as friends instead of the believers; or do you desire to give God over you a clear authority" (4:144). No one can leave or doubt God’s right over His servants. Thus God has established for His obedient servants friendship, forgiveness, and love. And God has prohibited the violation of their wealth, blood, and dignity, and God made this an important matter. These are their rights, which God has given them on account of what they restore to His right.

22- God has prohibited [Muslims] to associate with hypocrites, to ask forgiveness for them, or to seek friendship and love with them. But He has allowed to marry them. He has established for them inheritance, punishment, and judgment according to their confirmation [of belief].

Faith and associate are a proof for the Muslim who truly acknowledges the existence of God and acts in accordance with his true belief. It is forbidden for Muslims to kill or fight others as long as they appear to be satisfied with their authority and their judgment. Indeed, one who acknowledges something good should abide by it, and one who acknowledges something prohibited should avoid it. Despite their acknowledgment, the hypocrites will not be accepted, because they embrace the faith untruthfully. However, they are under the light of the faith, and living under His protection, though untruthfully and dishonestly. They are not genuine and true in their belief, as they attempt to trick God, and they help those who rebel against God,
unaware of their deception. Those people, if they refuse what they have acknowledged in terms of belief in God and His rights, then they are asked for truth. If they refuse and rebellion against the Muslims, they should fight them according to God’s order, which urges Muslims to fight the transgressing people, as revealed in the Qur’an: “…if two parties of the believers fight, put things right between them; then, if one of them is insolent against the other, fight the insolent one till it reverts to God’s commandment. If it reverts, set things right between them” (49:9). [This verse refers to] the invitation to return to what was asked from them, but they refused to give it and they became wrongdoers the blood of whom became allowed to be shed for what they had allowed of bloodshedding among the Muslims and fighting them and so that they are no longer considered to be faithful. [They brought this upon themselves] by becoming disloyal, capricious, and treacherous.

23- We are informed that in this fighting, approved by God, fists and shoes were used but no weapons. As you know, they were destroyed and became lawless rebels for not abiding by what they had acknowledged to be right. And God allowed to fight them in his name and it serves them right to be punished until they revert to what God commands, so that they can be close to Him as they were before. How could anyone call them faithful when they aggressively shed blood for no reason, profane the inviolable, spread mischief throughout the earth, and usurp people’s property and dissociate from those who are loyal to them in deed and whom God called believers? Shame on those who lead them! And praised are those who reject them out of obedience and love for God. Those who approve the wrongdoers’ deeds, help them, take part in their offenses, and arrogantly turn their backs on the right, they will share the wrongdoers’ torture in the hereafter. Whoever is ignorant of the right will acquire nothing but more ignorance. His burden will be much heavier, and he will be in fear for what he has committed. “And whosoever is blind in this world shall be blind in the world to come, and he shall be even further astray from the way” (17:72).

24- The Prophet (peace be upon him) was keen on fighting the oppressors for their horrible deeds until they returned to the right path and never infringed upon anybody’s rights. The Prophet continuously called the Jews, the Christians, and the Magians to embrace the just word they find in the book of God, and never to worship any god but God, and
never to associate anything with Him. The Prophet urged them to avoid abomination, perjury, and bad deeds, which God forbade them to do. [He also urged them] to free themselves from the shackles of believing in any false god and to believe only in God, and not to call upon any but God. God says, “And if they have surrendered, they are right guided” (3:20), and “if they turn away, then they are clearly in schism; God will suffice you for them. He is All-hearing, All-knowing” (2:137). Those who answer to his call have the same duties as Muslim and are allowed to do what they are allowed. Those who abhor Islam have to be fought as God ordaines “until they pay the tribute out of hand [jizyah(1)] and have been humbled” (9:29). When they consent to payment, they are free to practise their own religion. God allowed eating the slaughtered animals of the people of the Book, Jews and Christians, and also marrying their chaste women. However, He forbids eating the slaughtered animals of the Magians, and forbids marrying their women. But when at war with the people of the Book, Muslims are forbidden to marry their women or eat their slaughtered animals. If they antagonize Muslims in wartime, it is permissible to fight and kill them, to plunder their possessions, and to take captive their women and children born during war.

25- God makes lawful the spilling of the blood of Arab unbelievers, the confiscation of their money [and makes it permissible] to confront them and keep them away from the holy mosque. God forbids bequeathing unto them any inheritance, marrying one of them, or eating from their slaughtered animals. Further, He commands disapproval of their religion, refusal of their ransom or alms. They have no choice but to enter Islam or be slaughtered. This is the perfect tradition of the Prophet (peace be upon him) in relation to these religions. The just imams behaved similarly. A complete, effective, firm sunnah which the caliphs of God on earth apply without diminishing or exceeding it: “Thou shall find no changing the wont of God” (33:62).

God offers His forgiveness to all worshippers and establishes for them the proof through what He bestows on them with the elucidation, guidance, the distinguisher, the light, and the evidence, expounded by the messengers and the guides from among His servants. There is no doubt, ignorance or ambiguity; and God has clarified and provided for us evidence in detail. So whoever believes sincerely and seeks alleviation from God, will be

(1) This is the poll-tax, which serves as compensation for unbelief; EI', s.v. “Djizya”.
rewarded and will be named [classified], by the One who classifies, and he will be protected. God will bestow upon him the fraternity of Islam, as well as his rights, so that he can get on with his people.

26- Insincere Muslims are not Muslims; they are only Muslims by name. True Muslims are those who adhere to the rules of Islam and achieve its aims through following the straight way of great ethics, which will take them to the highest degree of fulfilment. Then, a Muslim will be able to avoid betrayal, stay perpetually honest, reject villainous company, keep aloof from what pulls a person towards dishonesty, and resist the luring enticements of betrayal, since when a person is unaware of the entanglement of temptation, he repents, fails, and becomes deeply depressed. And he will harvest misfortune unto himself, as justice confirms, and he will be exposed to great misery which leads to [the class of] unfortunate people, who conceal their true abominable character and abolish their oaths with God. God certainly knows the exact matter as well as the incontrovertible outcome.

27- People differ in their intensity of belief, and they are treated differently in God’s justice with respect to association, dissociation and postponement and nothing beyond that. This is what God’s justice requires which the Imam who exercises authority in the name of God is obliged to follow. The Imam will be held responsible to treat people according to their deeds. He categorizes them [according to the categories mentioned above] and executes God’s will in accordance with their status. When someone judges people without evidence and without knowing their status and rank, he commits a grave mistake by being unjust. Whoever deals with people as opponents and adversaries, is a transgressor and unjust. This is how these people are treated in this world and also they will be treated the same in the thereafter. Nevertheless, they are justly categorized according to their deeds, and no justice can be done for them. God says, “So as a consequence He put hypocrisy into their hearts, until the day they meet Him, for they failed God in that they promised Him and they were liars” (9:77).

It is for that reason that God calls them hypocrites, and for the disregard of what He commanded He called them profligates. [The category of] unbelief unites both polytheists and sinners among those who had accepted Islam, for there are two types of unbelief. The unbelief of *shirk* applies to those categorized as polytheists. The unbelief through
manifest acts is what hypocrites do, they had confirmed Islam officially, but abandoned the commands and obedience to God, and thus left Islam in secret. This is the outcome of overlooking His commands. It is His right that they should not practise what is unlawful and what is forbidden. This is how the people of iqrār (affirmation) are considered infidels: those whose judgment is adverse to what God has revealed. God says, "When they are called to God and His Messenger that he may judge between them, a party of them are swerving aside; but if they are in the right, they will come to him submissively. What, is there sickness in their hearts, or are they in doubt, or do they fear that God may be unjust towards them and His Messenger? Nay, but those – they are the evildoers. All that the believers say, when they are called to God and His Messenger, that he may judge between them, is that they say, 'We hear, and we obey'; those are the prosperous ones" (24:48-51). Therefore, with wrongful deeds, the people of hell go to hell; and with faith, the people of heaven are sent to heaven.

28- Islam is faith and faith is in Islam. Piety is also from faith. Each complements faith, fulfils its rights, and realizes its measures. However, it is beyond the boundaries of possibility for faith to be realised, if the religious ordinance of God is not maintained, or if what God forbids is practised, so keep away from this! Surely, the unbelievers are the wrongdoers and the profligates. Your deeds speak for you. When you do well you are judged positively, and when you do wrong, you are deemed unsatisfactory. God judges according to how we behave. Your behaviour and your deeds are indicative of your character. Your deeds incite either support or animosity. Certainly, this strengthens the bonds of Islam and establishes the firm pillars of association with or enmity to God. God was the first to disavow those who habitually commit sins, and [He was the first] to see them as enemies because of their [actions]. Then He made this an established [principle] and commanded [that] it [should be applied] to them. We follow the perfect tradition as well as God's commands when we act hostilely towards them [the people of sin]. We entrust the ones who pledge loyalty to God, are committed to obedience to His commands, are devout, and reject what He forbids. Our enemy is the perfidious one who is driven by his fancy, desire, enticement, and infatuation, and the one who deems permissible what God forbids and thereby becomes a sinner. Your Lord does not wrong His servants.
29- The hypocrites (ahl al-manzilah bayna al-manzilatayn) entered Islam, and acknowledged its duties and rights. They pretended to be content in the presence of Muslims. Yet, behind the Muslims’ backs they marred their religion and contradicted what God commands. When they are reproved, they apologize. Nevertheless, when they are summoned to repent, they ask God’s forgiveness, pretending to abhor their mistakes and repent of their sins. However, they go back to that for which they apologized, and to the same sins of which they repented. They are called back when they turn away, and they are gladly received when they return. Muslims can socialize with them if they repent. He who seals his deeds with true repentance is associated with Muslims. But the one who insists on being an unbeliever will not be associated with Muslims, and disassociating from him is obligatory. The worshippers’ ends are extremely reliable: either enmity and hatred or friendship and satisfaction. God has strong arguments against the disobedient, but blessed are the rightly-guided, who are enlightened with God’s guidance. And God “shall increase those who were guided in guidance” (19:76), “and the unbelievers it increases not, except in loss” (17:82).

We ask God for help in obeying Him, protection from sin, and success in following His guidance. The privileged are granted such guidance, and they enjoy felicity in God’s care. We ask for prosperity from Him. Such a matter is easy for the Omnipotent. May the peace and blessings of God be upon us, and may His blessings be upon Muḥammad, with true thanks to God.
CHAPTER THREE

THE SĪRAH OF IMAM RĀSHID B. SAʿĪD
TO THE PEOPLE OF MANṢŪRAH

3.1 Introduction

This sīrah is significant, because it helped to spread Ibāḍī ideas throughout Asia as well as to improve Oman’s relationship with the Sind region, or arḍ al-Hind. It is one of the few documents that illustrate this relationship. Al-Sālimī discusses the probability of contact between Oman and the Sind region in the 5th/11th century, at the time of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd, who communicated the Ibāḍī doctrine to the people of this region.¹ In his survey of the spread of Ibāḍism in India and China, Lewicki cites this epistle as proof of this contact.² He suggests that this sīrah might be a political correspondence concerning whether or not the Ibāḍīs were able to obtain political independence.³ Wilkinson also uses this sīrah to argue that the second imamate of Oman tried to restore the role of the first imamate in the Indian Ocean.⁴

Apart from the scholars mentioned above, most researchers on Omani history generally do not mention this sīrah or other jurisprudential works. The sīrah has so far been found only in three of the collections of Omani siyar: The collection al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt does not include the sīrah of Manṣūrah. No previous attempt has been made to publish or edit this sīrah. Thus this edition of the sīrah makes available new information about Ibāḍism in Asia.

3.2 Commentary

Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd al-Yaḥmadī is listed by Muḥammad al-Sālimī (d. 1985) in his Nahḍat al-aʿyān as the 24th Omani imam according to the

---

¹ Al-Sālimī, ’A., Tuḥfah, 1: 308; al-Sālimī,’A., Lum'ah, 12.
² EI², 3: 653.
³ EI², 3: 653.
chronology of Omani imams, or the 16th imam according to the chronology of Banū Kharūṣ imams.\(^{(1)}\) The Omani historical sources do not provide biographical details such as place and date of birth or where he grew up.

According to the Omani historical sources, Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd descended from Yaḥmad.\(^{(2)}\) The eponymous progenitor of the Yaḥmad tribes is identified as Yaḥmad b. Ḥumā b. ʿAbd Allāh b. Nizār b. Zahrān b. Kaʾb b. ʿAbd Allāh b. Mālik b. Naṣr b. al-Azd b. al-Qutha al-Yaʿrubī from the Qaḥṭān tribe.\(^{(3)}\) The important classical Omani work K. al-Ansāb mentions a Yaḥmadī among the companions of Mālik b. Fahm\(^{(4)}\) and indicates that the Yaḥmad immigrated together with the Azd, since Mālik b. Fahm took Oman from the Persians.\(^{(5)}\) This migration to Oman started after the Mārib dam burst in the 2nd century AD.\(^{(6)}\) This particular branch of the Yaḥmad tribe had a prominent role and became influential in Omani political life in the second half of the 2nd/8th century, after the death of Imam Julandā b. Masʿūd in 134/751. The tribe’s authority rose in Oman after the election of Muḥammad b. Abī ʿAffān al-Yaḥmadī to the imamate (r. 177–179/793–795). Although the imam was dismissed from the imamate, most of the Omani imams who succeeded him in the first imamate were also descendants of Yaḥmad. Omani sources agree that the author was elected to the imamate after Imam al-Khalīl b. Shādhān had restored the second imamate in Oman.

Judging from his sīrah manifesto, which addresses the schism between the Rustāq and Nizwā schools over Imam al-Ṣalt b. Mālik and his opponents,\(^{(7)}\) the author was probably born in Sawnī village that can be identified today as al-ʿAwābī, some 120 km west of Muscat. The sīrah was written in the imam’s house in this village, located in the mouth of the valley of the Banū Kharūṣ. This tribe is not far from the Yaḥmad clan,\(^{(8)}\) and it seems probable that he was born in this valley. Although

---

\(^{(1)}\) Al-Sālimī, M., Nahḍat al-a’yān bi-ḥurrīyat ahl ‘Umān, 63.


\(^{(3)}\) Al-ʿAwtabī, al-Ansāb, 1: 242; Ibn Durayd, al-Ishtiqāq, 1: 296.

\(^{(4)}\) Al-ʿAwtabī, al-Ansāb, 1: 242.


\(^{(6)}\) Miles, S., Country and Tribes, 22; EI’, s.v. “Mārib”.

\(^{(7)}\) Al-Sālimī, ‘A., Tuḥfah, 1: 308.

\(^{(8)}\) Ibn Durayd, al-Ishtiqāq, 1: 298.
his date of birth remains unknown, we do know that he was elected to the imamate at the beginning of 425/1034.\(^1\) Therefore, the imam is likely to have been born in the last quarter of the 4\(^{th}\)/10\(^{th}\) century. It is to be assumed that he was born between 390 and 395/1000 and 1005, since his name is not mentioned before the beginning of the 5\(^{th}\)/11\(^{th}\) century.

For further information about his life we can turn to al-Sālimī’s study of the poetry of his contemporary, the Ibāḍī leader Abū Ishāq Ibrāhīm b. Qays al-Ḥaḍramī.\(^2\) According to al-Sālimī, Abū Ishāq says that Imam Rāshid’s kunyah is Abū Ghassān and that he made Nizwā the capital of the imamate.\(^3\) Al-Sālimī also studies Imam Rāshid’s imamate from the date of the previous Imam al-Khalīl b. Shādhān’s death.\(^4\) We know that Imam Rāshid b. Sa’īd died in Muḥarram 445/April 1053, that he ruled the imamate for twenty years and that he was buried in Nizwā.\(^5\)

Imam Rāshid displays characteristics of a poet that are rarely found in other Omani imams. He was considered both imam and shārī\(^6\) when he was elected to the imamate. There is a text similar to that of the people who wanted to follow the imam elected among the Shurāh, which means the people who follow the idea of “selling” oneself in God’s cause: “You, Imam Rāshid b. Sa’īd, swear to obey God and His Messenger Muḥammad, and enjoin the good and forbid the evil, and conduct jihād in His cause, as well, you have to cooperate honestly with the people of shurāt.”\(^7\) He restructured the voluntary army of the shurāt system, aiming to assist the revolution against the foreign occupation.

Ibn al-Athīr describes the events of 442/1050, when the Omanis reoccupied the city of Oman\(^8\) and fled with the Buyid prince of Abū al-Muṭahhar. They were led by a certain Ibn Rāshid, possibly Imam Rāshid

---

\(^{1}\) Al-Sālimī, ‘A., Tuhfah, 1: 303-304.
\(^{2}\) For more details on Abū Ishāq al-Ḥaḍramī, see the introduction to his Dīwān Sayf al-naqqād.
\(^{3}\) This refers to Abū Ishāq’s poetry, in which he praises Imam Rāshid and says: “there is an imam in Nizwā who has been elected”. Al-Sālimī, ‘A., Tuhfah, 1: 304, 307.
\(^{6}\) Wilkinson, Imamate Tradition, 155.
\(^{7}\) Al-Sālimī, ‘A., Tuhfah, 1: 304.
\(^{8}\) Ibn al-Athīr may mean that the Omanis occupied Sohar when it was known as qaṣabat (capital) ‘Umān; see Yāqūt, Mu’jam, 3: 393; Ibn al-Athīr, al-Kāmil, 6: 292.
b. Saʿīd b. Rāshid. Moreover, Ibn al-Athīr believes that Imam Rāshid had been named Ibn Rāshid after his grandfather. Throughout the revolution Imam Rāshid was able to withhold tax from the Buyids when his authority had expanded over the Omani coast and the Buyids had temporarily lost control over three years between 1050 and 1053.\(^{1}\) Nevertheless, the imam’s attempt to expand his authority over the desert as well as the coast led him to turn towards southern Oman in Ḥaḍramawt to support the Ibāḍīs and their leader Abū Isḥāq Ibrāhīm b. Qays al-Ḥaḍramī against the Sulayhids. In this way the imam fought the other tribes opposing him, that is the ‘Aqīl and Nahd tribes in al-Ḥaḍāṣā’.\(^{2}\)

Classical Arabic literature gives a clear picture of the city of Manṣūrah in the Sind region,\(^{3}\) the origin of its name, and its golden age when it flourished as a trading market for all the Islamic states from the 3\(^{rd}/9\)th to the 6\(^{th}/12\)th century. The city was regarded as the capital of the Sind region (ʿāṣimatum al-miṣr) and was perhaps the greatest city in Sind.\(^{4}\) The city still exists and has kept its name. It is located in Pakistan, but is no longer linked to the Arabian Peninsula as it had been in the past. Al-Muqaddasi states that it used to be at the border of the Islamic state and that it had declined greatly from its past glory.\(^{5}\)

Manṣūrah’s geography and history are a source of debate for many historians. Some argue that the name Manṣūrah is derived from the Arabic word naṣr (victory).\(^{6}\) Al-Bīrūnī claims that it refers to al-Qāsim b. Muhammad b. al-Munabbih al-Thaqafi, who entered the city and said "nuṣīrtu (I am victorious)". This was during the time when al-Ḥajjāj b. Yūsuf al-Thaqafi took over Sind.\(^{7}\) However, al-Masʿūdī argues that the name originated from one of the founders: “... Manṣūrah refers to Manṣūr b. Jamhūr al-Kalbī, the deputy of the Umayyads.”\(^{8}\) Al-Ḥasan b. ʿAlī b. Muhallabī disagrees, saying, “It was named al-Manṣūrah because it

\(^{1}\) Bathurst, “Maritime Trade and Imamate Government”, 89.
\(^{2}\) Al-Sālimī, ‘A., Tuhfah, 1: 305. Al-Sālimī says that these tribes lived in al-Aḥṣā’ (the eastern region of Saudi Arabia on the Persian Gulf).
\(^{4}\) Al-Muqaddasi, Aḥsan al-taqaṣīm, 479.
\(^{5}\) Al-Muqaddasi, Aḥsan al-taqaṣīm, 479.
\(^{6}\) Al-Masʿūdī, Murūj al-dhahab, 3: 379.
\(^{7}\) Al-Bīrūnī, al-Qānūn al-Masʿūdī, 72.
\(^{8}\) Al-Masʿūdī, Murūj al-dhahab, 3: 379.
was built by ‘Āmir b. Ḥafṣ al-Huzmrad al-Muhallabī during the rule of al-Manṣūr of the ‘Abbasids.” (1) Al-Bīrūnī explains the etymology of its name before it became known as Manṣūrah. He says that it was called Bamnhūr, and that the Persians used to call it Bāhmnaz. In Zīj al-Arkand it was known as Barhamnābād. (3) Al-Iṣṭakhrī notes that in the Sind region it was known as Bāmīrāmān. (4) It could be argued that the name Manṣūrah emerged in the Islamic period. Perhaps the city was established before Islam and renamed in honour of its developer, Manṣūr b. Jamhūr al-Kalbī.

It could also be argued that the city was relocated by Manṣūr b. Jamhūr al-Kalbī, the deputy of the Sind region, at the end of Umayyad period, (5) because most of the geographical writers hold that the location of Bamnhūr is al-Manṣūrah. According to Yāqūt, Manṣūrah was considered to be in the third province, (6) on the other hand, al-Bīrūnī considers it to be in the second province. (7) The cities belonging to the second province were al-Daybul, Zindrj, Qadār, Mābile, and Tanblīy. (8) Al-Muqaddasī says that al-Manṣūrah is six leagues (sing. marḥalah) (9) from al-Daybul, twelve leagues from al-Multān, and fifteen leagues from Tawrān. (10) Manṣūrah was among the most remote Islamic cities, (11) located in a hot and rainy province. (12)

The city is located at the Gulf of the Mahrān river, (13) which makes it possible for the city to expand, (14) and is referred to as a peninsula. The architecture of the city was planned as in other classical Islamic cities. It had a wall built with wood and clay (15) with four gates: bāb al-baḥr, bāb

---

(1) Yāqūt, Mu’jam al-buldān, 4: 211.
(2) Al-Bīrūnī, al-Qānūn al-Masʿūdī, 72.
(3) Al-Bīrūnī, al-Qānūn al-Masʿūdī, 72.
(4) Al-Iṣṭakhrī, al-Masālik wa-al-mamālik, 173.
(5) Yāqūt, al-Mushtarik, 405.
(6) Yāqūt, Mu’jam al-buldān, 4: 211.
(7) Al-Bīrūnī, al-Qānūn al-Masʿūdī, 72.
(8) Al-Muqaddasī, Aḥsan al-taqāsīm, 479.
(9) EI2, s.v. “Marḥala”.
(10) Al-Muqaddasī, Aḥsan al-taqāsīm, 479.
(11) Al-Muqaddasī, Aḥsan al-taqāsīm, 479.
(13) The Mahrān river is the Sind river; see al-Muqaddasī, Aḥsan al-taqāsīm, 477; al-Iṣṭakhrī, al-Masālik wa-al-mamālik, 173.
(14) Yāqūt, Mu’jam al-buldān, 4: 211.
(15) Yāqūt, Mu’jam al-buldān, 4: 211.
Chapter Three

tawrān, bāb sindān, and bāb al-multān.(1) These architectural features distinguish Manṣūrah from other cities. The mosque was built with rocks and baked brick and was said to be similar to the Omani Mosque (probably in Sohar city), in the sense that both had many pillars made of Indian oak.(2) The city grew during the medieval period, on account of being a trading point between the Islamic state and India. The river contributed to the development of agricultural export, mostly of sugarcane and a fruit similar in size to an apple, with a very sour taste, referred to as bahlawiyah.(3)

The people of the city are described as intelligent, courageous, righteous, religious, and trustworthy merchants.(4) They possessed a great knowledge of Islam, as can be gathered from the great number of scholars that originated from there.(5) Ibn Ḥawqal mentions that they used money called qundahāriyāt; each dirham was roughly equivalent to five qundahāriyāt. They also used the dinar as currency for commerce. They dressed like Iraqis, while their kings dressed like Indian kings.(6)

Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd’s epistle is divided into four parts, which consist of an enjoinder to piety, history, polemics, and the doctrinal stance, respectively. The first part is a preliminary statement that largely consists of stylized remarks and some indications of doctrine. Parts two and three consist of quotations from other siyar that often appear in works on theology and jurisprudence, which serve to develop and define the epistle vis-à-vis other doctrines.

The epistle is not simply a letter to the people of Manṣūrah; rather, it is a manifesto, which occasionally addresses its readers or listeners directly. At the end of the epistle, the author says, “Listener! Definitely, you have the true knowledge about life and you have unveiled authentic enlightenment; “truly, you know better after you have seen with your own eyes, and have heard with your own ears.” This style makes use of the regular format used by the Omanis in siyar when corresponding with other regions. The siyar by Abū ʿUbaydah and Abū Mawdūd to al-Fadal b. Kathīr, Imam Muhannā to Muʿādh b. Ḥarb, and Imam al-Ṣalt b. Mālik to

---

(1) Al-Muqaddasi, Aḥsan al-taqāsīm, 477.
(2) Al-Muqaddasi, Aḥsan al-taqāsīm, 477.
(3) Yāqūt, Muʿjam al-buldān, 4: 211.
(4) Yāqūt, Muʿjam al-buldān, 4: 211.
(6) Ibn Ḥawqal, Sūrat al-arḍ, 321.
the people of North Africa are all written in a similar style. The sīrah in question makes use of the imperative (al-_FLUSH al-amr), “you should, you have to, you should be.” At the beginning of the epistle we read “fa-innī āmurukum (I command you)”, a form that is common in texts of this kind and always appears at the beginning of a paragraph. Such introductory parts are imperatives, known as wasiyyah bi-al-taqwā, and are here employed by the imam to address some theological issues, in an attempt to proclaim his ideas of Ibāḍī dogma.

The epistle warns its audience not to make the mistakes against which it cautions them. For example, the author says, “I shall warn you,” “I shall also tell you,” and “we remind you of what we have mentioned.” It is clear that the imam was in a position to influence the Sind region. Some authors limit themselves to the phrase nūṣıkum bi-al-taqwā (we enjoin you to fear God), or ittaqū Allāh (you must fear God), while others enlarge upon this theme. In the sīrah of Manṣūrah, the development of this theme takes up no less than four pages. These four pages are concerned with sin and its consequences.

In his introduction and conclusion the imam employs a style that is characteristic of sermons; the same style is used in the Friday prayer. In his introduction, the author omits the usual ammā baʿd, which normally comes directly after the taḥmīd and is common especially in epistolary and oratory genres. The author, for example, uses this style of introduction in a letter to the governor of Manah. The introductions to other Omani siyar are written in a similar style, for example, the introductions to the sīrah of Muḥammad b. Mahbūb to the people of Oman regarding Hārūn b. al-Yamān, the sīrah of Abū Qaḥṭān Khalīd b. Qaḥṭān, and the sīrah of Abū al-Ḥasan al-Bisyāwī. These siyar were written at an earlier time than the epistle in question. The author of this epistle omits the ṣalāt’alā al-nabī after the taḥmīd and only mentions it in the conclusion. Some dwell on this theme at much greater length than others. Some limit themselves to remarks about the Prophet and his successors; some explain God’s revelation of the religion to His

---

(2) Al-Kindī, M., Bayān al-shar, 38.
(3) Al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt, 1: 273.
(4) Al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt, 1: 81.
Messenger. The same style is used by Ibāḍī writers to show the main tenets of other faiths and how the rule of Ibāḍism was established after the death of the Prophet. The genealogy of the Ibāḍī people is also described.

The most important source quoted in Imam Rāshid’s epistle is the Qurʾān. He quotes from it liberally, in fact more than seventy times, prefacing verses with different expressions, such as qāla Allāh, wa-qāla tā ālā, and wa-qāla fī muḥkam kitābih. The quotations from the Qurʾān are used in several different ways. Occasionally, they support the author’s arguments, showing, for example, that God has not forgiven the obstinate people (al-muṣīrūn ‘alā al-dhunūb) who persist in sinful behaviour. In the first part of his epistle, the author attacks other doctrines, especially those of the Ḥashwīyah and the Ashʿarīyah. Each quotation from the Qurʾān is supplemented with only a short exegesis or gloss, which does not always give full and comprehensive support to his argument, as can be seen in his use of al-An‘ām 6:158. The author replies to the other doctrines by illustrating and comparing the opinions of the people who claimed that even if they persisted in sinning, God would forgive them on the day of judgment. He calls this an idea of sinful Muslims who claim that God will forgive their sins just because they have faith. This idea, the author argues, comes from the ideology of Jews and Christians and is obviously untrue, as can be gathered from the verse in the Qurʾān in which God said, "Nay, you are but men, of the men He has created. He forgives whom He pleases, and punishes whom He pleases."(1) In another verse about the Jews He said, "Have you taken a promise from God, (for He never breaks His promise)? Or is it that you say of God that which you do not know?"(2) The author uses classical Arabic throughout the epistle for quotations from the Qurʾān as well as from other literary sources. He carefully distinguishes between his own text and his sources.

In addition to the Qurʾān, the author incorporates the sunnah of the Prophet into his arguments, though more rarely. The epistle includes three hadīths of the Prophet. The first is used as evidence against the idea of persistence in sin, and the second and third are used to explain jurisprudential opinions. Clearly, the author considered it necessary to demonstrate the use of hadīth in argumentation, but it is nonetheless

---

(1) Qurʾān, al-Māʿidah 5:18.
(2) Qurʾān, al-Baqrarah 2:81.
apparent that, in general, the authors of Omani *siyar* rarely resort to ḥadīth, giving preference to the Qur’ān instead.

Another source of quotation is classical Arabic poetry, used in the manner of *shawāhid*, quotations serving as textual evidence. All the poets quoted are from the Jāhilī period,1 for example, 'Antarah b. Shaddād and Ṭarafah b. al-'Abd. It seems that Omani *siyar* of the first and second periods do not include quotations from poetry. This changes in the Omani *siyar* of the third period. For example, the *sīrah* of Muḥammad b. Mālik, also known as the *sīrah* from the Bāṭinah people, uses poetry to support Imam Muḥammad b. Abī Ghassān.

The imam adopts the expressive style of Ibāḍī speech, as did Abū Ḥamzah al-Shārī in Mecca: “We are from the people and the people are from us, except three kinds of people...”2 This is similar to the classification of people used by Munīr b. al-Nayyir in his epistle to Imam Ghassān b. 'Abd Allāh.3

The terminology used by the imam continued to be employed in Ibāḍī theological compilations. The epistle’s message is conventional and designed to give the audience a vision and sense of identity through a discussion of their creed and faith. In the epistle the imam tries to classify people as Muslims or non-Muslims, and as Ibāḍīs or non-Ibāḍīs. Muslims are referred to as *ahl al-iqrār* (the people of confession) or *ahl al-qiblah* (the people of the prayer niche, i.e. who pray in the same direction). They are people of confession, because they say lā ilāh illā Allāh wa-Muḥammad rasūl Allāh, and they are people of direction, because they direct their prayer to Mecca. Sometimes non-Ibāḍī Muslims are called *qawm* (group). The imam also distinguishes between what people say and what they do. Sinful believers are called *kuffār al-nām* (the ingrates) or *al-munāfiqūn min ahl al-iqrār* (the hypocrites among the Muslims). These terms are characteristic of Ibāḍī compilations.

The introduction and the conclusion are written in rhythmic prose, and in between the author gives advice on abandoning a life of material pleasures.

The doctrinal part of the epistle covers three themes: 1) God does not forgive the persistently sinful; 2) the persistently sinful will dwell in hellfire

---

1 EI, s.v. “Djāhilī”.
3 Al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt, 1: 299.
forever; 3) both the tyrannical leaders and those who obey them are sinful. They are explained in order to guide people so that they may enjoin the good (mārūf) and forbid the evil (munkar). These three themes form one doctrine, which is devised especially to govern human relations.

3.3 The Text

بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

1- مِن الإِمَامِ رَاشِدِ الْبَنِّ سَعِيدِ أَبِي العِبَاسِ مِن مِرِيجٍ، (1) والمُهْتَدِى (2) مَسْدِهَا، (3) وَأَبِي عَبْدِ اللَّهِ (4) مُحَمَّدٌ بْنُ بِروُزَانَ سَلَامُ اللَّهِ عَلَيْهِمْ، (5) فَإِنَّمَا أَحْمَدُ الْلَّهُ، وَأَمَرُوكُم بَطَاعَتِهِ وَأُوصِيكُمْ، وأَفْحَاصُكُم عَن مَعْصِيَةِ الْقَادِرِ عَلَيْكُمْ، فَأَفْتُوا الْلَّهَ فِي مَا سَاءَكُمُ وَسَرَّكُمْ، أو نَفَعَكُمْ أو ضَرَّكُمْ، وَكُونُوا الْلَّهِ شِنَاحِيَََ، ولِدِينِهِ (6) نَاصِرِيَّ، وَأَهَلِ طَاعَتِهِ مُؤْازِرِيَّ، وَبِالمَعْرِفَ عَامِلِيَّ آمِرِيَّ، وَعَنْ الْمَنْكِرِ مُنْتَهِيَ وَزَارِيَّ، وُلِدَةَ الله مُبادِرِيَّ، وَعْلَيْ مَا أَصَابَكُمْ فِي صَابِرِيَّ، نَحْعَّدُكُمْ عَلَى الْجَبَّيْلِ وَأَمْوَالِكُمْ، وَتَخْتَطِعُونَ (7) عَلَى الْجَبَّيْلِ وَأَمْوَالِكُمْ، وَلَا يَكُونَ الْمَوْلِيَّ عَلَى الْمَكَانِ، وَعْلَيْ عَلَّمَيْنِ الْجَبَّيْلِ وَأَمْوَالِكُمْ. فَلِيْتَوَلِّي النَّجْمُونَ.

2- ثُمَّ أَنَّ اللَّهَ أَحَذَّرَكُم مِن مَّمَاتِي الشَّيْطَانِ، وَمَمَّا (8) يُوازِرِهِ (9) عَلَى ذَلِكَ، (10)
من الأعوان، منهم أنفسكم وهاكم وشهواتكم وذنياكم، وقد قال الله تعالى:

{ ... إن النفوس لأمارة بالسوء إلا ما رحم ربي إن ربي غفور رحيم } (12: 53)، وقال:

{ أفرأيت من أتخذ إلهه هواه وأصله الله على علم وحكم على سمعه وقلبه وجعل على بصرو غشاشة فمن يهديه من بعد الله أفلأ تذكرون } (45: 25). وقال:

{ ... ويريد الذين يتبعون الشهوات أن تعبدوا ميلا عظيمًا } (4: 27)، وقال:

{ أعلموا أن الحياة الدنيا لعب ولهو وزينه وت따خر بينكم } (4: 11). قال:

{ كأنتم في الأموال والأولاد كمثل غنيث أعجب الكفار بعبده نم يهيج فترات مصقلة نم يكون حطاما وفي الآخرة عذاب شديد } وềuه: { مغفرة ومن الله ورضوان وما الحياة الدنيا إلا متاع الغرور } (11: 20).

3- وعند هذا، فتقربوا إلى الله محبة أوليائه، وتبعدو عن سخطه بغض أعدائه، فإن الله يقول في محكم كتابه الذي لا يأتي به الباطل من بين يديه ولا من خلفه: { ولا تركنوا إلى الذين ظلموا فتمسكم النار وما لك من دون الله من أولياء تسمرون } (11: 13). ألا فافهموا عن الرحمن الرحم، وتتبدروا في آيات القرآن، فإن الله قد أمر بذلك، إذ يقول: { كتب أثرناه إلتك مبارك ليبدروا آياته وليبدروا أولوا الألباب } (38: 29)، وإنما هلك في الناس رجلان: رجل أشرك بالرحيمن، ورجل تجاها على الله بعد العرفان، وأخذ بفتنة الشيطان، وهو مع ذلك يرى أنه من أهل الإحسان. وقد قال الله تعالى في

ذلك: أنَّمَّن زَيَّنَ له سوء عمله فرأى حسنًا فإن الله يقبض من يشاء ونهدي من يشاء فلا تذهب نفسك عليهم حسرات إن الله علّم بما يصنعون (35: 8).

وقال: «أماَّئَت من أَخْطَى إِلَّهِهٍ هَوَاءً وَأَضُلُّ إِلَّهِهٍ عَلَى عَلَمٍ وَخَطَّطَ عَلَى سَمْعِهِ وَقَلْبِهِ وَجَعَلَ عَلَى بَصَرِهِ غَيْشَاوَةً فَمِنْ يَهْدِيْهِ مِنْ بَعْدِ اللَّهِ أَفَّإِذْ كُرُونَ» (45: 33).

وقال تعالى في السّيرك: «إِنَّ اللَّهَ لا يُغَفَّرُ أَن يُشْرَكْ بِهِ وَأَفَّإِذْ كُرُونَ» (1: 16). وإذاً "يُغَفَّرُ ما دون ذلك لمن يشاء" يعني: يغفر ما دون ذلك من الذنوب مع التوبة من بعدها والإفلاس عنها. إنه قد بين ذلك وأخبر به في محكم كتابه، حيث يقول: «وَأَيُّهَا الْعَالَمُ لِتَعْقَبُوا الْكَبَارَ رَبَّكُم ْنَارًا أَثْمَيْتُوهَا وَأَجَابَنَاهُمْ بِإِبْكَارٍ ثُمَّ أَهْلَكْنَاهُمْ فَأَلْهَمْهُم بَيْنَ الْيَهُودَ وَالْمُشْرِكِينَ مِنْ أَهْلِ الْكَتَابِ وَهُمْ الْيَهُودُ وَالْمُسَلِّمُونَ إِذَا قَالُوا: "نَحْنُ أَبْنَاءُ اللَّهِ وَأَحْبَاءُهُ..." قَالَ اللَّهُ ﴿فَقِيلَ﴾ (18: 5) قَالَ اللَّهُ ﴿قُلْ﴾ (1: 18) قَالَ اللَّهُ ﴿وَمَنْ يَبْرِكَ،...﴾ (3: 81).

وقد علم أولو الألباب أن الله تعالى إما يغفر لليهود والنصارى عند تركهم للهودية والنصرانية وذَخْورِهِم في الإسلام، وتوبيتهم مما كانوا عليه من الشرك الحرام؛ لأن الله قد بين ذلك) بقوله(2: "وَمَنْ يَبْعَثُ غَيْرَ الإِسْلَامِ دُنْيَا فَلَنْ يُقبَلَ مِنْهُ وَحْيٌ فِي الأَخِرَةِ مِنَ الْخَاتِمِينَ) (3: 85). وكذلك إما يغفر لأهل المعاصي والكبائر من أهل الإقرار مع تركهم لذلك وزوجهم عنه بالندم والاستغفار، ولن يغفر الله لهم ذلك مع الإقرار؛ لأنه تعالى يقول: ﴿وَنَلَّى﴾ (1: 4) ﴿فَذَكَّرُونَ ﴾ (3: 1). 

=S, C.

(1) فقد ضل ضلالاً بعيداً، =، -
(2) عند: مع، =، -
(3) C, N, S
(4) C
(5) C, N, S
(6) C
(7) يَبْعَثُ، =، -
(8) وَلَنَ, =، -
ولا يقبل الله الطاعة ممن يُصرِّعون، وإنما يتقبَّلُها ممن التّقيين؛ لأنه لم يُتقَبَّل ممن ولدي ندم صلى الله عليه وسلم، وهو عاص له، قربانُه الذي تَقَبَّلُ مع ذلك قربان أخيه. فمِلْ نُزُلُ أن الله تعالى يتقبَّل الطاعنة ممن العاصين ويفبر العذاب للمصيرين، كذَّبهُ القرآن وأعجَرْهُ البرهان؛ لأن الله يقول:  

﴿... إِنَّمَا يَتَّقَبَّلُ اللَّهُ مِنَ الْمُتَّقِينَ﴾ (1: 27). ففيه هذا بيانٌ ليم كان لقلبٌ أو ألقى السمع وهو شهيدٌ أنْ الله لا يقبل الطاعة ممن العاصين وإنما يتقبَّلها من التّقيين؛ لأنه لم يُتقَبَّل من ولد يدم، وهو عاص له، قربانه الذي تَقَرَّبَ به إليه، وتَقَبَّل مع ذلك قربان أخيه. فمِلْ نُزُلُ أن الله تعالى يتقبَّل الطاعنة ممن العاصين ويفبر العذاب للمصيرين، كذَّبهُ القرآن وأعجَرْهُ البرهان؛ لأن الله يقول:  

﴿... إِنَّمَا يَتَّقَبَّلُ اللَّهُ مِنَ الْمُتَّقِينَ﴾ (1: 27). ففيه هذا بيانٌ ليم كان لقلبٌ أو ألقى السمع وهو شهيدٌ أنْ الله لا يقبل الطاعة ممن العاصين وإنما يتقبَّلها من التّقيين؛ لأنه لم يُتقَبَّل من ولد يدم، وهو عاص له، قربانه الذي تَقَرَّبَ به إليه، وتَقَبَّل مع ذلك قربان أخيه. فمِلْ نُزُلُ أن الله تعالى يتقبَّل الطاعنة ممن العاصين ويفبر العذاب للمصيرين، كذَّبهُ القرآن وأعجَرْهُ البرهان؛ لأن الله يقول:  

﴿... إِنَّمَا يَتَّقَبَّلُ اللَّهُ مِنَ الْمُتَّقِينَ﴾ (1: 27). ففيه هذا بيانٌ ليم كان لقلبٌ أو ألقى السمع وهو شهيدٌ أنْ الله لا يقبل الطاعة ممن العاصين وإنما يتقبَّلها من التّقيين؛ لأنه لم يُتقَبَّل ممن ولدي ندم صلى الله عليه وسلم، وهو عاص له، قربانه الذي تَقَرَّبَ به إليه، وتَقَبَّل مع ذلك قربان أخيه. فمِلْ نُزُلُ أن الله تعالى يتقبَّل الطاعنة ممن العاصين ويفبر العذاب للمصيرين، كذَّبهُ القرآن وأعجَرْهُ البرهان؛ لأن الله يقول:
عذابًا ألييمًا يعني: وجيعًا. وقال (1) أيضاً في سورة أخرى: "هل ينظرون إلا أن تأتيهم الملائكة أو يأتي ربك أو يأتي بعض آيات ربك يوم يأتيني بغض آيات ربك لا يتفعل نفسًا إيمانها لم تكن آمنة من قبل أو كسبت في إيمانها خيرًا..." (6: 158) يعني: لم تكن (2) صدقت من قبل الآيات (3) بالإيمان، وهي النفس المشرفة، ثم قال في النفس المصدقة بالإيمان: "... أو كسبت في إيمانها خيرًا..." يعني: في تصديقها عملًا صالحًا.

4- وقد روي أن الحسن بن أبي الربيع (4) البصري دخل على جابر بن زيد - رحمه الله (5) - وهو يجدوه (6) نفسه للموت فقال له: يا أبا (7) الشعثاء، قُل: لا إله إلا الله! فسكت جابر فأعاد عليه القول، فقال: يا أبا الشعثاء، قُل: لا إله إلا الله! فلم يجبه (8)، فقال الحسن: لا حول ولا قوة إلا بالله، رجُل مثال جابر بن زيد لم يرَق نفسه عند موته شهادة أن لا إله إلا الله، ثم أعد عليه القول ثالثًا (9)، فقال له: يا أبا الشعثاء، قُل لا إله إلا الله، فقال جابر: قد طال ما قلناها إن تقبلت، ثم نُذل هذه الآية: "هل ينظرون إلا أن تأتيهم الملائكة أو يأتي ربك (10) أو يأتي بعض آيات ربك يوم يأتي بعض آيات ربك لا يتفعل نفسًا إيمانها لم تكن آمنة من قبل أو كسبت في إيمانها خيرًا قيل انظروا إن..."
5- فإن رأى أحد أن الله لا يخليد في النار أحدًا من أهل الإقرار، وسأول
في ذلك قول الله تعالى: فَأُمَّنَّا اللَّهُ فَقَامُوا فِي النَّارِ لَهُمْ فِيهَا زَفِيرٌ وَشَهِيدٍ
خالدين فيها ما دامت السماءوات والأرض إلا ما شاء ربيك... (11: 1-6).

7- فقال إن الله قد استثنى من فعله حين(1) أخبر بخالدتهم في النار، ولا
بدلاً للاستثناء أن يقع على شيء أو يهدم شيئاً في الإخبار والإقرار، ولا يجوز
ذلك الاستثناء من الله كلامًا فارغًا لا معنى فيه ولا فائدة لديه. فلنا: إن الله
تعالى أن يكون(2) كلامه فارغًا من المعنى والفائدة والحكمة البالغة وغير ذلك،
غير أن(3) جهلت التنزيل والإقناط في الإخبار والتقدير، لأن الاستثناء هاهنا لم
يقع على ما توهمنه واعتمدته عليه وذهبته في تأويلك إليه، وإنما وقع عليه ما
مضى حصيلة يوم الفصل، التي لم يدخل فيها أهل العذاب(4)، لعله (5) من
الله تعالى من اشتكائهم في تلك الساعات من أول يومهم بما لا بد له(6) من
السؤال والجواب ومناقشة الحساب. وبيان ذلك قوله تعالى في أول الخطاب:
.... ذلِك يوم مجموع الله الناس وذلِك يوم مصير الله أمالي(7) إلا لأحل
معود(11: 1-4)، ثم قال: يَوْمَ يَتَّلَى... معنى(8): ذلك الأحل
.... لا نكتم نفس إلا بإذنهم فيهم شقي وسعي(11: 5)، ثم أخبر،
فقال: فَأُمَّنَّا اللَّهُ فَقَامُوا فِي النَّارِ لَهُمْ فِيهَا زَفِيرٌ وَشَهِيدٍ خَالِدِينَ فِيهَا مَا...
Chapter Three

98

(11: 106–107) يعني: (1)

ما شاء من ذلك اليوم العظيم - على ما فسّره أهل العلم - لاشتغالهم في أول يومهم بشأن يوم القيامة من المساءلة(1) والمحاسبة، لأنه تعالى لم يعبث في ذلك بعد أن أخبر بدخولهم في النار وخلودهم(2) فيها إذا جاء اليوم الذي ذكره، لوجب أن يدخلهم في النار ويُحليهم في العذاب من أول يوم الحساب، ودليل الحق المبين في صحة هذا التفسير قوله: ﴿إلا ما شاء ربك﴾ يعني(4): من ذلك اليوم العظيم. ولم يقل: من شاء ربك، فيخص بعض(5) أصحاب الجحيم. فافهموا ذلك واعلموا أن الله تعالى لم يقل في كلامه: خالديَّ فيها ما دامت السموات والأرض(6) إلا ما شاء ربك من أجل الإقرار.


---

(1) يعني: - ، 
(2) المساءلة: مسألة، C، N，S 
(3) خلودهم: دخوهم، N，S 
(4) يعني: - ، 
(5) بعض: بعد، C 
(6) الأرض: - ، 
(7) الله تعالى: الله، N，S 
(8) يغفر: - ، 
(9) عليك: + ， N
7 - If you object to the saying of Allah: «And whoever is in your company» (19:71-72), then: We do not accept this. If you say, what is this saying, «And whoever is in your company» (19:71-72). We say: This is a proof of what you claim. Because it has entered to us. Do you not see what Allah says: «Surely the people of the city that has been overthrown, and the people of the city that has been overthrown.» (28:23). And surely the entry of it is for his (the city's) destruction. And Allah sends it for the people of the city that has been overthrown. (28:68). And the unbelievers and the hypocrites: «And the city of the hypocrites, the city of the sinners, the city that has been overthrown.» (2:81). And they are in chains and fire. «And those who have been overthrown, they are in the fire.» (2:81). And Allah is with those who assembler, «The wrongdoers, they are in the fire.» (2:81). And the history is preserved by Allah in the book. (4:106-107) because he has exempted from these, we say: Surely our answer to you in explaining this verse.

1. (S).
2. (S).
3. (C).
4. (C).
8- وقد قال بعض أهل العلم أيضا إن الله يعزيم على شيء ثم يستثنى فيه، كقوله تعالى: 
...لتدخل المسجد الحرام إن شاء الله أمين محليين رؤوس سماك ومقصرين... (48: 27). فلم يرد(1) بهذا الاستثناء هذين ما أراده مين دخولهم المسجد الحرام، بل قد دخلوا أمين محليين رؤوسهم ومقصرين كما وعدهم رب العالمين. ومزاعم(2) ذلك، فإن التسخ لا يكون في الخبر ولا في الوعيد والوعد، وإنما يكون في الأمر والنهي؛ لأن صادق الخبر لا يخبر بشيء ثم ينقضه خبره ذلك بضيده؛ لأن من أخرى عن(3) شيء ثم نقض خبره الخلاف فإنه كاذب في نقض خبره، وكذلك(4) لا يخلو أمر(5) من وعد شرا يفعله، أو وعد خيرا ثم لم يفعل ذلك أن يكون كاذبا في نقض قوله، أو يوجد له بدء وأن يمنعه مينا فيعليه لم يرى بعد ذلك من الصلاح في تركه، فهذه صفة تعالى الله عنها وهو بريء منها(6)؛ لأنها(7) صفة تعالى الله تعالى: بلى من سب سائقة واحاطنا به خطيئته فأولم أصحاب النار هم فيها خالدون(2): 81)، وأخير أيضا يحولهم في النار، وأخبر أيضا وعلى صاحب لها بالكذب والبدء والجهل. فلم إذا كان هذا هكذا(8) صفح أن جميع ما أخبر به الله مع ما ذكره(9) من وعده ووعده لا ينسخه شيء من بعده، وقد قال تعالى: بلى من كسب سبسة وأحاطت به خطيئته فأولم أصحاب النار هم فيها خالدون(5: 81)، وأخير أيضا يقولههم في النار، وأخبر أيضا على تعالى لا تكون إلا صحيحة، ولا يجوز أن تكون(10) منسوخة، وقال أيضا: وعد الله المتمكنين
THE SĪRAH OF IMAM RĀSHID B. SA‘ĪD TO THE PEOPLE OF MANṢŪRAH

وَالْمُنَافِقَاتِ وَالْكُفَّارِ نَارَ جَهَنَّمَ خَاليِّنَّ فيهَا هَمُّ حَسْبُهُم وَلَعْنَهُمُ اللَّهُ وَلَهُم عَذَابٌ مُّقِيمٌ﴾ (9:68).

وَقَالُوا لَن تَمَسَّنَا النَّارُ إِلاَّ أَيَّامًا مَعندُودَة قُنلْ أَتَّخَذْتُم عَهْدًا فَلَن يُخنَفَ اللَّهُ عَهْدَهُ أَم تَقُولُونَ عَلَى اللَّهِ مَنَا لاَ تَعْلَمُونَ﴾ (2:80).

وَإِذَا قِيلَ لَهُمُ اتَّبِعُوا مَا أَنْزَلَ اللَّهُ قَالُوا بَلْ نَتَّبِعُ مَا أَلْفَانَهُمْ عَلَيْنَهُ أَوَلَّو كَانَ نبَاؤُهُمْ لاَ يَعْقَلُنْهُمْ شَيْئًا وَلَا يَهْتَدُونَ﴾ (2:170).

Quoted in the Qurʾān (63:1).
Chapter Three

نعودُ بالله من قنَّة الشيطان ومن الصلاة بعد البناء! فافهموا ما ذكرهُ لكم من ذلك، وتفكروا فيه، وتفحصوا معانيه.

1- واعملوا أن الناس ثلاثة: مؤمن صادق، ومشرك، ومنافق. فالمؤمن من آمن بالله ورسوله وجميع ما جاء عن الله به، وعمل بطاعة وجه، ولم يبطل معصية الله صاحب عمله. والمنافق من دخل في الإيمان بلسانه وخرج منه بفسقه وعصیا. وقد يسمى (1) المنافق كافراً لأن الكفر كفران: كفر نعمة وكرف شريك، واللفاق نفاقان: نفاق قلب ونفاق عمل. وليس كل كافر مشركاً لأن الكفر بالشيء قد يكون جهوداً له بالكفر، وقد يكون مخالفته لله بالعصمية دون الجحود والنكران. وتبيان (2) ذلك ما آخر الله به من قول إبراهيم عليه السلام: والذين معه إضنالوا، إذ قالوا لقومهم: «... إنا بُرناء منكُن وَميمَّا تَعنبُدُونَ مي نََوبَنُكُنَّ...﴾ (60:1).

وبداء فليم كفر إبراهيم ومن معه بقومهم جهوداً حمهم أنهم (3) ليسوا بقومهم، بل كان ذلك على وجه المخالفة لهم في فعلهم. وكذلك قول الله تعالى: «... فَمَنْ يَكْفُرَ بِالطَّاغُوْنِ وَيُؤنِمَّيِبِ اللَّهِ فَقَدْ أَسَنتَمَّكَ بِالْعُرْنَوَةِ الْوُثْقَى...﴾ (2:216). فلما يرد الله تعالى أن يكون الكفر بالطاغوت جهوداً لها أنها ليست بطاغوت، بل هي طاغوت، إذ محال أن يكون الطاغوت ليس بطاغوت، بل هي طاغوت، ولكن أراد الله أن يكون الكفر بما مخالفته لعملها. وكذلك كفر (4) أهل الإقرار من أهل القيمة إذا يخرج معناه على (5) مثل هذه الصفة. وليس كفرهم جهوداً لما أقواه بما من المحلية، بل هو مخالفتهم لما دخلوا (6) فيه من الإيمان بالطاعة، فلذلك جمعناهم وأهل

(1) يُسمى: حمي، S
(2) ل: C
(3) تبيان: شان، C
(4) أفمن: هم، C, N
(5) كفر: كفر، N
(6) على: آنها، N
(7) دخلوا: دعوا، N
الشرك جميعًا في هذا الاسم وفرقنا بينهم في الحُكم؛ لأننا حكمٌ على المشركين إذا حاربناهم بغينية أموالهم وسبي حريمهم وأطفالهم، ونستجلل(1) مع ذلك فشل مُدبرهم وجريهم مع زوال الخوف من ماعادتهم(2) وحِرّبهم، ولا توارثهم كناوا حربيًا أم سلماً. ولا نستحلل نساء(3) المشركين من أهل الكتاب بالترويج إذا كناوا حربًا، ما(4) لا يجلُ ترويجٌ امرأةً لواحدٍ بكتاب الله وجلٍ أسبيها(5) لأنّه بكتاب الله، فذلك فيجمع في امرأة واحدة حُكمان مختلفان ترويجٍ وغنيمةٍ في حال واحدٍ كلاهما بكتاب الله، فذلك حرمنا ترويجهم في الحال التي أحللنا فيها سياحهن. ثم إذا لا نحكم بشيء من ذلك في أهل القيبلة ما تمسكوا بالإقرار في الجملة؛ لأننا لا نجمعهم وأهل الشرك في حكم يفترقون لديه، كما لا نفرقهم في اسم يجتمعون فيه. لَمّا جمعهُم "أهل الكفر" على ما فسرناه في أول الذكر، دخلوا جميعًا من شرك، ونافق، في قول الله تعالى: ﴿وَالَّذينَ كَفَرُوا لَهُمْ نَارٌ جَهَنَّ مَ لاَ يُقْضَى عَلَيْهِمْ مَثَالًا مَنْ فَيَمُوتُنِّهِ وَلَا يُخَفَّفُ عَنْهُمْ عَذَابِهَا كَذَلِكَ نَجْزِي كُنِّي كَفُنورٍ﴾ (3: 36). فكلا الفريقين كفُورٌ: من أشرك بإنكاره ونافق في إقراره. ففهموا ذلك.

11- واعلموا أنَّ المؤمن هو(6) ولي الله لا(7) يرِضى بعَداوة أوليائه، وأن الشرك والمُنافق هما عدوُّا الله وأن الله لا يرضي بولاية أعدائه، والمنافق أخُ للمشرك، والمشرك أخٌ للمُنافق، وصديقٌ ذلك في كتاب الله، حيث يقول: ﴿أَلَمْ تَرَ إِلَى الَّذينَ نُفَاقَوا يَقُولُونَ إِلَى أُخوَنَّهُمْ الَّذينَ كَفَرُوا مِن أَهْلِ الْكِتَابِ لَكَ ذِلِكَ تَحْرُجُونَ مَعَكُمْ وَلَا تُطَعِّ فِي كُمْ أَحَدًا أَبَا وَإِنْ قُوْلُتُمْ لَنَصْرَنَاكُمْ وَاللَّهُ﴾ (3: 79). وهم الشريعة في ذلك.

---

1. نستحلل: يستحلل
2. معاذتهم: مهاودهم
3. نساء: سبا
4. ماء: C, S
5. سبيها: سباها
6. المؤمن هو: من هو
7. لا: N

---
يشهد إنه من الكاذبون (59:11). وقد غي الله تعالى عن ولاية أعدائه بقوله في محكم كتابه: "يا أيها الذين آمنوا لا تؤولوا فوما غضب الله عليهم قد يسموا من الآخرة كما خسر القفار من أصحاب الغبر" (6:13).

12- ألا فاعقلوا عن الله في حظه، واذكروا حجة علكم في كتابه، واحذرعوا من أليم عقابه، أن تؤولوا أهل عداوته، وتبعدو أهل ولايته، أو تحلوا حرامة أو تحرموها حالله. فإنكم تركون من ذلك عصيبيه النبي مهأكم من ركوبها، أو تركون، في ذلك طاعته التي أمركم بفعليها، والله الحجة البالغة على من فعل ذلك، فإنهم من مغضات الجهالة ومورباق الضلاله. ثم إن أعلمنكم أن الله شرع دينا فيما، فمن سلكه كان حنيفا مسلمًا، ومن تركه كان كافرا مجرما. ثم لم يعد من المكلف من عباده في ترك ما أمرهم بفعليه أو ترك ركوب معصبيه، متعمداً أو جاهلًا في مختلفه، لم يعذر الله تعالى بجعله من بعد ما نبهه من الأحكام ومبهره من الخلاف والحوار. ولم يكلف من كفر من أهل الإسلام إلا بعد وريهم عن العدل وركوبهم لمعصية الله في العمد والجهل، ولا تجاوزوا على الله بعد أن أرسل إليكم رسولًا همًا، وأنزل عليكم كتابًا مستبينًا، وقال: "ولقد جنناهم يكتب فصلتاه على علم هدى ورحمة ليقوم يؤمنون" (7:2) وقال تعالى: "كمأ أرسلنا فيكم رسولًا منكم يبلغ عليكم آياتنا ويركِّبكم ويعملكم الكتاب والحكمة ويعملكم ما لم تكنوا تعلمون" (2:151). فأتى لكم العذر في التجاهل بعد النبي وكمال الدين، فاستقينوا الله على سبيل الذي دعاكم إليه وحستكم عليه، ولا تتفرقوا فيه، فإن الدين واحد والحق واحد، وقد قال الله (4)
تعالى: "شرك لِكُمْ مِنَ الدِّينِ مَا وَصَى بِهِ نَوحٌ وَالَّذِي أَوْحَيْتُهُ إِلَيْكُمْ وَمَا وَصَيْتُنَّ بِهِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَمُوسَى وَعِيسَى أَنْ أَيْمَنَوا الدِّينِ وَلَوْ تَنْفَرَّوْا فِيهِ..." (42: 13).

وَقَالَ أَيْضًا: "إِنَّ هَذَا أَمْتُكُمْ أُمَّةً واحِدَةً وَأَنَا رَبُّكُمْ فَاعْبِدُونَ" (21: 92). وقد تعلَّمنا ما وَقَعْ (1) بين أهل القيبلة من التنافْسٍ والاختلاف العامٍ، حتى (2) صاروا أعداءً يتجاربون وأحزاباً (3) يتلاقون، كُلُّ حُزبٍ بما لديهم فَرُجُون. فَتَعلَّمنا عندّ ذلك أَنَّهم لا يَفترقون ولا يُصيبون العدل جميعًا وهم مُختلفون مُتبادلون، يتلاقون في ذلك ويتجاربون، وليس يُجوز أن يُصيب الحق منهم إلاّ حزب واحد؛ لأن الحق فردٌ واحد (4)، إلاّ في الفروع التي يجوز الاختلاف فيها ولا تَقْعُ الفرقة عليها، وقال الله تعالى: "فَماذَا بَعْنَ الْحَقِّ إِلَّا الضَّلاَلُ فَأَنَّى تُصنَّعُونَ" (10: 32).

13- فَفِي فَوْقَ الحَقِّ وَبِرْهَانِ الصِّدَقِ أنْ نَرجِعَ وَيَرجِعُونَ فيما هُم فِيهِ يختلفون إلى كتاب الله المُنَزَّل وسَنَّةِ نَبِيِّهِ المُرَسَل - صلى الله عليه وسلم - فهندي (5) بعدِهما وتفتدي من اقتديهما، امتناعًا في ذلك لما أمر الله به في عهده فأُنزل في كتابه، حيث يقول: "فَإِنْ تِنْزَعَتْ عَنْهُ مَا فِي شَيْءٍ فَرُدُّوهُ إِلَى اللَّهِ وَالرَّسُولِ إِنْ كُنْتُمْ تَؤنُفُونَ بِاللَّهِ وَالْيَومِ الآخِرِ ذَلِكَ خَيْرٌ وَأَحْسَنَ تَأْوِيلاً" (1: 19). فلا تَتَبعُوا سبيل مصلَّات الغَلَبِ وتأويلات الخُطأ والسفَط، فإن الله تعالى (6) يقول: "وَأَنَّ هَذَا صِرَاطِي مُسْتَقِيمًا فَأَتِبَعُوهُ وَلَا تَتَبَعُوا السِّبِيلَ فَتَفَرَّقُ بَيْنَكُمْ عَنْ سَبِيلِهِ ذَلِكَ حَكِيمٌ وَصَادِقٌ مَعْنًى " (6: 153). وسلم الله الذي شَرَعَهُ لِعَبادِه، وارتضاه لنفسه، وأمر (7) وقد تعلمون ما وَقَعْ وقال فِي فَوْقَ، و C, N.
باتباعه، هو الإيمانُ باللهِ ورسُولهِ(1) وما جاءوا(2) عن اللهِ به، والتصديقُ بكتابهِ المُبين
الذي أنزلهُ على رسولهِ الأمين، ونفي الأشياء والأقداد عن اللهِ بِحُكمِهِ، وإقامة
الصلاةِ بِطُهُورِها ورُكُوعِها وسجودها(3)، وما [4] تَمِّ إلا به مِن فرائضِهِ وسُنَّهَا
وِحُدُودِها، واستقبال القبلاً لها(4)، وإبادة الركاءة على واجب أُرَضِيَّها، ودفعُها إلى
أهليها. وحج البيت الحرام مع وَجُودٍ الزاد والراحل، وزوار الموارع الحائلة،
واحتساب ما تَنَّى الله عنه من الرَّفَثِ والفسوق والمُجَادِلَة، وصيام شهر رمضان
بالعفاف والستر حتى يكمل طرفا الشهر، والجهاد في سبيل الله مع وَجُوب(5)
ذلك بكمال عدد الرجال وإمكاناً العدل للفتائل، والآخر بالمعروف والنسيء عن
المُكَرَّ، وإقامة حُدُود الله على الصعيف والقوي، والعدو والولي، وولاية من واقع
الحق في القول والعمل، واجتناب رَكَوب الكبائر، ولم يَنْبَر على الصغير، وعذابُ
من خالفَ دين المسلمين وعصى رَبَّ العالمين، حتى يَرْجِع إلى رَبِّهِ ويتُوا مِن
مُخالِفته وذُلِّيه(6).

وِّياَوْلِدُ نِّيَاهُم مِّن حَقِّ في مالِهِ ونفسه، وقَسَّمَ المواريِثُ
على عدل الكتاب والسنة. والتسليمية بِالله(1) على الذبيحة، والحُلاة، وسَنَّرُ
المورَة، وحُقُول العانة، وغَسَّل النجاسة، والاغْتِمَال مِن الجَنَبَةِ والخَيْض، وتَقْلِيم
الأظافر(1)، وفَرَق الشعور، وغسل الأموات وتَكْفِينهم، والصلاة عليهم ودفْنُهم،
وأداء الشهادة والأمانة، وَتَرْكُ الكُذِبِ والخُناية والحُروج مِن حقٍّ الوالدين كَانَا

---

1. رسله: رسوله، C نسخ: 1
2. جاءوا: جاءوا به، N وسجودها: S
3. لها: ها، C N S وحُدُودها: S وذِئبه: ديه، S
4. بِالله: +، C الأظافر: الأضافير، S
بارئين أو فاجرِين، من غير ولاية هما في معصية رئيما، وصلة السرجم، وبؤر الجار، وحسن الصحة للصاحب، وغض الأبصار عن العوارات، وحفظ الفروج من المحرمات، والاستئذان في البيوت المسكونات.

واما أمر الله به المؤمنات من غض أصارهن، وحفظ فروهن، ولا يبدِين زينتهن إلا ما ظهر منها، ولا يضِنون بخمرهن على جيوبهن، ولا يبِدُين زينتهن إلا يعولهن أو أبيهن، أو آباء عولتهن، أو أبنائهن، أو أبنائهن، أو بني إخوانهن، أو نسائيهن، أو نساءهن، أو أولئك ألمهن، أو التابعين غير أولي الإربة من الرجال، أو الطفلي الذين لم يظهروا على عوارات النساء، ولا يصَرُون بأرجلهن يعظم ما يخفف من زينتهن، ولا يضحبن في مصابهن.

وتحريم الدماء كلها والأموال إلا ما أُبيح في ذلك من الخلال، وتحريم الْبِحْس في الميزان والمقابل والعش في سائر الأموال، وتحريم الربا وأكلي أموال الينامي بظليم، وأموال الناس بالباطل والأثم، وتحريم غلول الغنيمة وقُذْف المُحصَن والمحصنة، وزويج المتعة، وإبلاغ العدة، والطلاق لغير السننة، والمراجعة بلا إشهاد على الرجعة، والughtاء في الدرب والنفا في الحيض، ووطء السبي، المشركين وما يشترى من إماء المسلمين حتَّى يحضسن إن كن حاوئًا، أو يضغعن إن كن حاملي.

وتحريم نساء الأيام على أبنائهن وأبناءهن على آبائهن، وما حرَّم الله من أمهرتكم وأخواتكم، وعمائكم، وحالائكم، وبنات الأخ، وبنات الأخوات، وأمهاتكم اللائي أرضعنكم، وأخواتكم من الرضاعة، وأمهات نساياكم،

Quoted in the Qur’ān (24:31).
ورباديكُمُ اللاي في حُجورِكم مَن نسائيكُمُ اللاي دخلتُم بِهِ َّ، فإنْ لم تكُنوا
دخلتُم بِهِ َّ فلا جُنا َ عليكم، وحَلائيلِ أبنائيكمُ النذي َ مين  أصنلابِك
وأنْ تَجن مَعُوا بينَ الأُختَينِ إلاّ ما قَدن سلفَ (1) في النكاف، مع ما حَرَّمَ اللهُ تعنالى مين
السِّفا ِ وما حَرَّمَ رسولُ اللهِ -صلّى الله عليه وسلم- من تزويجِ المرأةي علّن
عمّتيها وخالتيها؛ لأنهما (2) إلى: 100، فسمّى الخالةَ أمًا (3)، كما قلُ
رسول الله (4) -صلّى الله عليه وسلم: "رُدُّوا علَيَّ العبّا َ أب
وكان عمّا .

17 - وتحريمُ المَينتةي والدمِ ولحمِ الخينزير، وذواتي المَخالنبِ مين  السِّباعِ
والطير، وشرب ما حرم من المَسك والخمور، وما حَرَّمَ رسولُ الله -صلّى الله
عليه وسلم- من المَزاميرِ وضراِ المَعاز ي والطنايبر، وتحريم ما أُهيلَ لغيرِ اللهِ بنه
من الصدقة والمُفوذة والمَرْدِية والطبيعة وما أكَل السَّبُعُ إلاّ ما ذِكَّيتُم، وما ذُبِحَ ذمي  الذبيحةي والمَوقُو
ى النُّصُب، وأنْ تَستقسِمُوا بالأزلامِ (6)؛ وتحريمُ الحنرامِ كُلِّنه، واسنتحلالُ
الحلالِ (7) من جَلّه. فلِم العدلُ على الناسِ عامةً، قوَّيْهِم وضعيفهم، ووضعِبهم
وشريعهم، وبغضهم وحبيبهم، وعبادهم وقربهم؛ لأنْ الله يقولُ: "يَا بُيَّةُ
الذين آمنوا َ كُونوا قَوُامينَ بِالقِسْطِ شهداءً لِله وَلَوَ َ على أَفْسَسْكَمْ أو الْوَالِدَيْنِ
والأخرينِ إن يَكُن غَيْبًا أو فَقِيرًا فَاللهُ أَوَّلِيَ بِهِمَا فَلا تَتُبْعِنْهَا أو انْ
تَلُوْوا أو تُغْرَيْوَا فَإِنَّ اللهَ كَانَ بِمَا تَعْمَلُونَ خَيْرًا" (4: 135). فليس في دينِ

Quoted in the Qurʾān (4:23). (1)
أَهْمَأْ: لَأَهْمَأْ، S، N، C. (2)
إِلَى: +، C. (3)
فسمّى الخالةَ أمًا (4) -صلّى الله عليه وسلم: رسول الله، S، C. (5)
Quoted in the Qurʾān (5:3). (6)
الحلالِ: الخُلُوّ، C.
المسلمين حذف لمسلم من أجل حبيه وولائه، ولا ظلم لفاجر من أجل يغضبه وعداوته، خاصة المسلمين من ذلك؛ فإنهم(A) أهل العدل وأصحاب الفضل.
فهذا هو دين الله وسبيل المسلمين الذي أوعد الله من يتبع غيره من الفاسقين نار(1) جهتهم وببس مثوا الظالمين، فقال تعالى في ذلك: (وَمِن يُشَاقيق الرَّسُول مِنْ بَعْدِ مَا تَبَيَّن لَهُ الْهُدَى وَيَتَّبِعُون غَيْرِ سِبْيَي المؤمنين تَوَلَّى مَا تَوَلَّى وَنُصِبَّهُ جَهَنَّم وَسَاءَتْ مَصِيرًا) (2:110). فليتق الله من رغيب عن سبيلهم أو قال جلاله أقابلهم، فإنه كانوا أباق علما، وأغزر فهما، وأكثر فقهنا، وأحفظ كائنا.
بعد السنة، وأصدق حبة الله، وأحرص على رضاه، وأعرف بأهل ولايته وأعدائه. فلا يرغب من سبيلهم من رغب عنهم، ولا يفسقهم من همو أو آثارهم بالفسوق منهم، فإنهم الحجة على عباده، والقوم بحقه في بلاده، وهم الذين أبصرهم المكر حين ظهر أهليه، ففارقوه علي، وحاربوه لديه، وعرفوا المعروف حين استمر عن غيرهم، فتبينوا فيه ودعوا من تركه إليه. ولم يفسق المسلمون أحدا إلا على مكرمة، ولم يعبو إلا بعضه(1) إلا معصية؛ لأنهم لا ينقيمون على أحد شيئا من أفعاله إلا أن يعفووا في ذلك صحة ضلله، ثم يأمره عند ذلك بأعدل مما أتى به. وكذلك في الحق الواجب ألا يقضوا(2) على أحد شيئا عرفوه إلا ما هو من الطاعة أعدل منه، وإنما تقم المسلمون على الناس ما خالفوا فيه.
كتاب رَبِّهم وستة نبيهم في أتباع الشهوات وترزين الضلالات.
18- ثم إننا ذكرناكم آن من الناس والناس مثبا، إلا [مشكرا] [جاحدا، أو جبارا] الله معاندا، أو [شاكا] فيه قد عرف كفره بعصبانه، أو [معينا] له في ظلمه

(1) قالهم: فافهم، C.
(2) نار: مأواه، C.
(3) كائن: كانوا، N.
(4) يعبوه: يعبونه، C.
(5) يقضوا: يعصوا، S.
وَعَدُوا، أو [مُجَالِفَةٍ] لِدِينِ اللهِ الَّذِي نَعْمَعُ عَلَيْهِ، أو [شَاكَأَ] (فِيهِ، أو [مُصِّبَرَ] عَلَى مَعَاصِيهِ. قَاتِلُ اللَّهُ قَوْمًا، دُأَبُوا بِطَاعَةِ الجَباَرِيَةِ مِنْ أَجَلِ أَنْسَابِهِمْ) وَسُلْطَانِهِمْ، وَلَمْ يَنْظُرُوا مِنْ ذلِكَ إِلَى فَسَادِ أَدِيَانِهِمْ فِي تَعْمَالِهِمْ لِلْجَبَرُوتِ (وَرَكُومُهُمْ) لِلَّمُكْرِرِ، وَتَعْطَيْهِمْ لِلْحُجَّوْدِ عَمْنَ يُحْبَوْنَ، وَتَعْدِيْهِمْ فِيهَا عَلَى مَنْ يُبْغِضُونَ (وَابْتَغُّهُمْ)، وَأَحْدَّهُمْ الأَمْوَالُ مِنْ غَيْرِ أَهْلِهِ وَوَضْعُهُمْ لَهَا فِي غَيْرِ أَهْلِهَا، وَسَفْكَهُمْ الدَّمَاءِ الحَرَامُ، وَإِقَامَتِهِمْ عَلَى النَّفَاهَاتِ الْعَظَامِ، وَاسْتَعْمَالِهِمْ مِنْ يُعَفَّرُونَ بِالْفَسَادِ وَظِلْمِ الْعِبَادِ، وَهُمْ عَلَى ذلِكَ يَنْسِبُونَ (أَمْرَاءَ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ)، وَيَتَعَالَوْنَ خَلْفَاءً عَلَى الْمُسْلِمِينَ، لَا يَمْتَنِعُونَ عَنْهُمْ، وَلَا يَمْتعِنُونَ (عَن طَاعَتِهِمْ، وَيَشْتَهُونَ أَعْجَمَاءَهُمْ فِي بَاطِلِهِمْ، وَيَتَوَلَّوْنَهُمْ وَيَنْتَلُوْنَ لَهُمْ، وَيَتَتَنُّونَ فِي مَعِيَشَةِ اللَّهِ أَمْرَهُمْ، حَتَّى إِذَا خَرَّ عَلَى عِلْمِهِمْ ظَلَامَ مَنْ تَفْتَرَى فَأَغْتَطَضَ مِنْهُمْ مُلْكُهُمْ رَجْعَوْنَ إِلَيْهِ، وَعَلَّلُوا فِي أَمْرِهِ عَلَى عِلْمِهِ، وَاكْتُفُوا هُمْ إِمَامًا فَيَمْنَهُمٍْ وَجَعَلُوهُ أَمِيرًا عَلَى عِلْمِهِ: عَيْبًا لَّهُمْ عِلْمَهُ، أَتَابَعًا لَّهُمْ أَنْسُهُمْ، لَا يُمْتَزِجُونَ (صَلاَحًا) مِنْ فَسَادِهِمْ، وَلَا يَعْفُرُونَ ضَلَالًا مِنْ رَشَادٍ شَبَّةً) عَلَى ذلِكَ صَغْرِيْهِمْ، وَمَا تَأَلَّى عَلَى كِبْرِيْهِمْ، وَأَغْرَبًّا (فِيهِمْ أَعْجَمُهُمْ، يُوْلُونَ أَنْفَسَهُمْ عَلَى طَاعَةِ مَنْ مُلْكُهُمْ، يَقْتُدونَ فِي ذلِكَ بِقَرَائِهِمْ، وَيَقْتُونُ) فِيهَا أَثَّارُ عُلَمَائِهِمْ عُلَمَاءُ السَّوْءِ أَعْدَاءُ الْقُرْآنِ، الْجَهَلَةِ بِحَقِّ التَّنْزِيلِ، الْعُمَّةِ عَن عَدْلِ التَّأوِيلِ. يُلِبِّسُونَ عَلَى غَواَةِ النَّاسِ.

شَاكَأَ: سَاكَا، N. (1)
أَنْسَاهُمْ: نَسَالِهِمْ، S. (2)
لِلْحَقَّ، S. (3)
رَكُومُهُمْ: رَكَوْمُهُ، S. (4)
يُبَيِّنُونَ: يَبِيِّنُونَ، C. (5)
يُسَمِّئُونَ: يَسَمِّئُونَ، S. (6)
يَمْتَنِعُونَ: يَمْتَنِعُونَ، N، S. (7)
يَعْفُرُونَ: يَعْفُرُونَ، C، S. (8)
شَبَّ: شَبَّ، S. (9)
أَعْرَبُ: أَعْرَبُ، S. (10)
يَقْتُونُ: يَقْتُونُ، N. (11)
وطاغِمهم وصُغرائهم وعَمَّهم، مَن لَّا بصر لهم في حَسَ ٍ ولا قبيح، ولا تميز معهُ بِين فاسد وصحيح، فِيَّضْعُفْنِهم رَبَّمَا يَحتجون به لهم من الروايات الكاذبات ومَنْشِبَاهه الآيات، لقول الله تعالى: ﴿بَيْنَ الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا أَطْعِمُوا الْلَّهَ وَأَطْعِمُوا الرَّسُولَ وَأَوْلَى الْأُمَرِ مِنْهُمْ﴾ (4: 59)، فَلَنَا هُمُ: إن كان ذلك في قولِ الله عَز وجل عُمومًا فليس هو بعموم. فقد خُصِّ الله أهل الظلم مِن حَمْلةٍ مِن أمْرٍ بِطاعته من وَلَى الْأَمْر بِقَوْلِه: ﴿وَلاَ تَرَكُوا إِلَى الَّذِينَ ظَلَّلُوا فَيَمْسَكُوهُم النَّارُ وَمَا لَكُنَّ مِن دَونِ اللَّهِ مِنْ أُولِياءَ نَمْبَئُونَ﴾ (11: 113). فهذا من قول الله خصِّ الله وأولُه لذلك يقول الله تعالى: ﴿لَقَدْ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنِ الْمُتَّقِينَ إِذْ يُبَايِعُونَكَ تَحْنَى الشَّجرَةٍ﴾ (18: 18). فظاهر هذا الكلام يقع على جماعةهم، فهُم خاصُّون للبعض من جمِّهِم، وهُم الذين علم مَا في قُلوبهم مَا هو رضى الله بهم الذين علم ما في قلوبهم مَا هو سخط الله، ورضي عنهم فيه. ولأن الله لا يرضي بمعصياتهم، إذا كان أهل الشجرة منهم مَ خَطَّأ صاحبُهُ وضلَّ اللهُ وسَفَكَ مع ذلك دَمَهُ، قاصداً لذلك متعَبَّداً عليه، فَيِحَتَار (1) إِلَيْهِمْ فيه، فلا يجوز أن يكون القاتل على حقٍّ، والذي قُبِل على حقٍّ، والمضِلُّ لغيره على حقٍّ والغير الذي ضلَّ اللهُ على حقٍّ، ذلك ما لا يجوز أبداً، ولا يكون القول به رشداً؛ لأن هؤلاء أضداد والأضداد مُنافِية، ولا يجمعها حالف واحد، وقد قال الله: ﴿أَفْتَجَّعُ الْمُسْلِمُينَ كَالْمُجَرَّمِينَ﴾ ما لَكَ مِنْ كِيْفَ تَحْكُمُونَ (68: 35-36). فإن قال: إن (2) هؤلاء جميعًا مُسلمون، فَلَنَا لِهِ: إن أردتُ به اسم دُونُ غيره فهو كذلك، وليس كل من سُمي مُسلمًا كان عندَ الله مؤمنًا، أَلَّا تَرَى إِلَى قول الله تعالى: ﴿قَالَتِ الأُمَّةُ أَمَّا قُلْتُمْ أَنَّا مُلْكُنَا وَلَكُنْ فِيْلَى ؛ ﴿(1) فيحَتَار: مختارًا، C (2) C (3) إن: -
قولوا أسلمتما وَلَمَّا يَدْخَلُ الإِيمَانُ فِي قُلُوبِكُمْ...» (69: 14). فأنتَ إن أردت بِهِ إسلاماً يكون عند الله إيماناً، فقد مضى الجواب في ذلك ما فيه كفاية لِمَن كَان لَهُ عقل ونهاية، وقد قال الله تعالى: «وَمَا يَسْتَوٍّ الأَعْمَى الَّذِينَ يَنفِّذُونَ وَالْمُسَرِّرُونَ» وَعَمِلُوا الصَّالِحَاتِ وَلَا الْمُسْلِمَاتِ فَعَلِيَاً ما نَتَّذَكَّرُونَ (60: 58).

19 - وَمَا يَدْلُّ أيضاً [على] أنَّ الكلام قد يكون معناه خاصاً وَيَرِد ظَنَاها عاماً قول الله تعالى في ريح عاد: ﴿تَدَمِّرُ كُلَّ شَيْءٍ وَلَهَا عَرْشٌ عَظِيمٌ﴾ (27: 23) ولم تَأْتَ بلقيَّة مُلك سُليمانَ - عليه السلام - ولا غير ذلك من أشياء(4) كثيرة، مثَل النجوم الهواية والرياح الجارية والسحاب(5) السارية. وظهر هذا الكلام عاماً، وهو في الحقيقة خاصاً، وللغة قد تنطبق هذَا كله، ومن ذلك قول عائرة بن شداد العبسي(6): جَادَتْ أَعَلَى كُلُّ بَكْرٍ حَرْثٍ فَتَرَكْ كُلَّ قَرَارَةٍ كَالِدِهِرَمٍ(7) ولم تَنَكِّن كُل سَحَابَة بِكَر - وهي التي لم يفتحها المطر - قبل ذلك تعود(8).

1. حاضرا، C
2. البحر: الشجر، S
3. الله: N
4. أشياء: S، C
5. السحاب: السحاب، N
6. العبسي: S، N
7. جادات: S
9. تكن: C
10. تجد: S

(1) خاصاً: حاضرا، C
(2) البحر: الشجر, S
(3) الله: N
(4) أشياء: S, C
(5) السحاب: السحاب, N
(6) العبسي: S, N
(7) جادات: S
(9) تكن: C
(10) تجد: S
على ذلك البيت الذي وصفه. وهذا مثل قول طرفةѐ البكر: 

يقولون إني بالغ كله مأرب

وأني وإن غم النجوم لمهندي

ومعلوم أنه لا يبلغ كله ماربه كما وصفه أصحابه، وكيف يكون ذلك

وهو يقول:

ليحولة أطلال برقة تهمم

تلوح كباقي الوشم في ظاهر البلاط

فروضة دعمي فاكنا حائل

وقفت (1) مما أبكى وأبكي إلى الغد (2)

فدل من ذلك قوله إنه كان من إريه أن تكون أطلال خولة معاصرة، فأمست منها خالية حتى أبكاه ذلك، ولا يجوزه ويكيه إلا ما لا يرغب فيه، وقوله أيضاً:

فما لي أراني وابن عمّي ماليكا

متى أدنن منه ينأ (4) عنبي ويبعدي (5)

فكان من رأيه أن يكون من ابن عمّه داني، فأصبح عنه بعيداً نائياً. وقوله

عنترة أيضاً:

This line is attributed to the poet although unattested in his anthology. (1)

(2) تهمد: خميل
(3) Al-ʿAbd, Muʿallaqa, line 1.
(4) فروضة دعمي فرحة خولة دعمي، S, N, C.
(5) Rawdat Duʿmī is the name of a mountain in Bilād Banī ʿAqīl. See: Yāqūt, Muʿjam al-buldān, 3: 89.
(6) وقفت: ضلل، S, N, C.
(7) Al-ʿAbd, Dīwān, 148.
(8) ينأ: ينعن، S, N, C.
(9) Al-ʿAbd, Muʿallaqa; line 70.
وأعلم ما في اليوم والأمس قبلاً،

ولكني عن علم ما في غدٍ عمً.

ومعلوم أنه لا يعلم جميع ما في اليوم والأمس، وإنما أراد أنه يعلم ما قد علمه دون ما قد خفى عليه وجده، ومثل هذا كثير في لغة العرب وأشعارهم، وإنما أنزل القرآن على لغتهم. قوله تعالى: ﴿يا أيها الذين آمنون أطيعوا الله وأطيعوا الرسولَ وأولي الأمر متكممَين﴾ (4: 59) إذا هو خاص لأهل طاعته دون الفساق من أهل معاصيهم؛ لأن الله تعالى لا يأمر بأمر نعوذ الله ورسوله ﷺ عليه بفعله، وقد قال جل ملّه: ﴿ولا تركوا إلى الذين ظلموا قتمسكم النار﴾ (11: 13) ولو أمر بطاعتهم لم يعذب على الزكاة منهم، وقال أيضا لنبيه - صلى الله عليه وسلم -: ﴿وَلا تَرَكْنَى إِلَى الَّذينَ ظَلَمُوا إِنِّي جَاعِلُكَ لِيُنَانِيَهُمْ إِمَامًٍ﴾ (2: 121) وقال إن نحن مع رسول الله ﷺ - صلى الله عليه وسلم -: ﴿ولا تَنَانَى إِلَى الَّذينَ ظَلَمُوا إِنِّي جَاعِلُكَ لِيُنَانِيَهُمْ إِمَامًٍ﴾ (2: 121). فالله تعالى لا ينال عهده على الظالمين، فأعلمه بذلك إعلاماً.

This line is attributed incorrectly to ʿAntarah, however, it is a line of Zuhayr b. Abī Salmā’s Muʿallaqa; line 47.
فلتقِ (1) الله من يُحالفُ عدل الكتاب ويقولُ بغير الحَقّ والصواب،
وَبِعَرْفِ الْكِتَابِ عَنْ مَوَاضِيعِ أَبْنَائِهِ للمُنشآبِه، إنَّهُ كَمَا أَحْرَمَ الله في كتابِه، إذ
يقولُ الله (2) تعالى: ﴿هَوَ الَّذِي أَنْزَلَ عَلَيْكَ الْكِتَابَ مِنْهُ آياتٌ مُّكْرَمَاتٌ هَـنَّ أَمْ
الْكِتَابَ وَأُخْرُجَ مَنْ تَشَابَهَتْ فَأَمَّا الَّذِينَ فِي قُلُوبِهِمْ زَيْغٌ فَيَتَبَعُونَ ما تَشَابَهَتْ مِنْهُ ابْتِغَاءَ
الْقَزْىَ وَالْعَفَا، فَأَمَّا الَّذِينَ تَأَوَّلُوا وَمَا يَعْلَمُ تَأَوَّلُهُ إِلَّا الله ...﴾ ثم قال: ﴿... وَالْرَّاسِخُونَ فِي
الْعَلَمِ يُقِلُونَ آمَناً بْهُ كُلٌّ مِّنْ عَنْدِ رَبِّنَا وَمَا يَذَّكَّرُ إِلَّا أُولُوا الأَلْبَا
﴾ (3: 7).

20- ألا فاطلبوا السلمامة لأنفسكم، واحذرُوا من الزَّللِ في دينِكم، فإنَّ الزَّللَّ في الدين يُفْضِي (4) إلى العذاب المَهِين. ولا يَفْتَنُكم مِّن بَعْ(5) حواء، وباَعَ آخِرَتهُ بُدْنِيه، فإنَّ الدَّنيا غَنِيرُهَا لذُوُّها، فَقَنُّهَا لِمَنْ رَكَّ(6) إلَيْهَا، غَرَّارتِبْلَاتِهَا(7)، فَقَنُّهَا لأصْحَابِهَا، ظَاهِرَةَ سَرْوُهَا، وباَطِنَها غَرُورَهَا، وحُلَلُها حِسَابَ وحُرَّارَهَا عَقَابَ، وَكَثِيرَها بَل، وعَزِيزَهَا ذِلِّيلٌ، وَجَامِعَهَا سَلِيبٌ، وَساَيِّدُهَا غَرِيبٌ، وأوْلُها آمالَ وظُنُّوَنَّ، وأخِرُها أخَالَ وَمَنِّوَنَّ.

21- أُلِيَّها السامعُ لقد عرفتُ منها ذلك حقَّ العرفان، وباَيُّكَ عنها كُلٌّ البيانِ. وكيف لا تُعَفُّ ذلك (8) بعد أن نظَّرَتُهُ بعينييي، وسَمَّيْتَهُ بَذْنِيي، ووعيَّتُهُ بِجَانبي، وشَكُوْتَهُ برَبِّيي، إذ تَمْسَى مُفَجَّعَا بَابِيي، ونَصَحُ مَعْرِيَ في أَحِيي، وَتَعَذَّبُ مُفَارَقَا لَجَذِيَّكَ(9)، وترجعُ صائحاً على ابنِك، وَتَبِعُ مَنْ عَلِيَّهَا مَعْرِيَ، وَتَرِبُّتُ مَفَجَّعَا بِبَلْبَالَكَ، مُشْتَغَلَا بِسَمْيِكَ وأَوْجُاعِكَ. ثُمَّ
تفيقُ من سكرة ذلك فتصبح في ضلاليك غادياً، وماليكك لاهاياً، ولمَّا قد أصابك ناسياً، فقد شغلك يومك عن غدك، وماليك عن نفسك، وذنبك عن دينك، فأغفلك حرصك عن شغلك، وداراك عن قبرك، وكأن لم تعطلك نوائب الزمن. من رُزقت بِفقدك من الإخوان، وكان لم تكن عالما بآكل عن نعمتك منقول، وعلى تعشك محمل، وفي نجد ضريحك مدخلون، وعين عملك مسؤول. فلم تزل لاهاياً بنهيك وأمرك، غافلاً عن ذنبك، ووزرك، ذاهلاً عن موت بك وتشرك. حتى إذا انقضت أيامك، ونزل بك جمامك، ورضح بالعرق جينك، وهذه من الشدة أنبلك، وأعجزت الخلاص، وأعورتك الناص، ظلت متتحيرة في نفسك وأمورك، نادما على تفريطيك وتقصيرك، لا تعذر فتنصر، ولا تقال فتعتذر. فقد ذلك حل حزنك وعظمت حسرتك، واشتدت بلالك، وانقطع رجاؤك. فحصلت أسيراً في جهلك بسُوء فغلك، صايراً إلى عذاب الجحيم، خاضراً جناه النعيم.

فئتوبوا إلى الله! تُوبوا إليه مع ذُنوبكم، وجدوا في خلاص نفوسكم قبل نزول الأحل وقوَت العمل، وانقطاع الحياة والأمل. وفقنا الله وإياكما لطاعته، ومن عليينا وعليكم برحمه. إنه غفور رحيم، وعلى ما يشاء قدير، والحمد لله رب العالمين، وصلى الله على مُحمّد وآله الظاهرین، وعلى جميع النبيين والملسلين، وعلى الملائكة المقربين، وعلى عباده الصالحين من أهل السماوات والأرضين، وسلّم عليهم أجمعين(1) و وسلم تسليماً.

(1) حرصك: عرصك، C
(2) ذنبك: دينك، C
(3) حنل: حلت، N
(4) وسلم عليهم أجمعين، +، C
3.4 Translation

In the Name of God, the Most Gracious, the Most Merciful

1- From Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd to Abū al-ʿAbbās b. Murayj, al-Muḥannad b. Sadhā, and Abū ʿAbd Allāh b. Muḥammad b. Barūzān. Peace be upon you. Praise be to God. I command you to be obedient to God, and I forbid you to disobey the One who has power over you. Fear God in things that upset you or please you, and in things that benefit you or harm you. Be grateful to God, be His religious supporters, and be also in support of His worshippers. Do good and command it; avoid evil and prohibit it. To God’s obedience take the initiative. Be patient with the misfortunes of your life. You will praise the consequence of this on the day when you are in need of good deeds and when you give up your kinship and wealth. At that time, your hopes and tricks will be worthless. All success is from God alone, and it is He in whom people must trust as the protector of the faithful.

2- I shall warn you against the evil acts of Satan himself, and of his supporters who help to degrade you, your souls, your desires, your wants, and your lives. God says, “Yet I claim not that my soul was innocent—surely the soul of man incites to evil—except inasmuch as my Lord has mercy; truly, my Lord is All-forgiving, All-compassionate” (12:53). And He says, “Hast thou seen him who has taken his caprice to be his god, and God has led him astray out of a knowledge, and has put a seal upon his hearing and his heart, and laid a covering on his eyes? Who shall guide him after God? What, will you not remember?” (45:23). And He says, “Those who follow their lusts desire you to swerve away mightily” (4:27). And He says, “Know that the present life is but a sport and a diversion, an adornment and a cause for boasting among you, and a rivalry in wealth and children. It is as a rain whose vegetation pleases the unbelievers; then it withers, and thou seest it turning yellow, then it becomes broken orts. And in the world to come there is a terrible chastisement, and forgiveness from God and good pleasure; and the present life is but the joy of delusion” (57:20).

3- Therefore, you must seek closeness to God by liking His sincere and close servants. Avoid His discontent by disliking His enemies. God has said in His perfect Book, which no falsehood enters, neither from before it nor from behind it: “And lean not on the evildoers, so that the
Fire touches you—you have no protectors apart from God—and then you will not be helped” (11:113).

You should learn from the most Gracious, the most Merciful, and you should reflect on the Qur’ānic verses. God has commanded, “A Book We have sent down to thee, Blessed, that men possessed of minds may ponder its signs and so remember” (38:29). Two types of people will inevitably perish: the first is the person who takes partners beside God; the second is the one who ignores God after recognizing him, and follows the temptations of Satan while yet believing himself to be among the righteous people. About that God has said, “And what of him, the evil of whose deeds has been decked out fair to him, so that he thinks it is good? God leads astray whomsoever He will, and whomsoever He will He guides; so let not thy soul be wasted in regrets for them; God has knowledge of the things they work” (35:8). And He says, “Hast thou seen him who has taken his caprice to be his god, and God has led him astray out of a knowledge, and set a seal upon his hearing and his heart, and laid a covering on his eyes? Who shall guide him after God? What, will you not remember?” (45:23). About those who are involved in a partnership with Him, God has said, "God forgives not that aught should be with Him associated; less than that He forgives to whomsoever He will. Whoso associates with God anything, has gone astray into far error” (4:116). "He forgives whomsoever He will” means that He forgives all sins except holding partnership in worship. God forgives whatever sins are committed, if there is repentance on the part of the individual, and if this repentance is accompanied by complete avoidance of these sins. God made this clear in His perfect Book: “Yet I am All-forgiving to him who repents and believes, and does righteousness, and at last is guided” (20:82). God has demonstrated this for the people of the Book (the Jews and the Christians), when they said, “We are sons of God, and His beloved ones” (5:18). God said to Muḥammad, “Tell them, ‘Why then does He chastise you for your sins? No; you are mortals, of His creating; He forgives whom He will, and He chastises whom He will” (5:18). The people of understanding know that God will only forgive the Jews and the Christians, if they leave their religions and embrace Islam. Also, they must repent of what they have been doing before in their polytheism. God has made this clear: “Whoso desires another religion than Islam, it shall not be accepted of him; in the next world he shall be among the losers” (3:85).
Therefore, God will grant pardon to the Muslims who have done wrong only if they leave these errant deeds with repentance, and show remorse when they ask for God’s forgiveness. God will never forgive them if they persist. God has said, “and do not persevere in the things they did and that wittingly” (3:135).

The Prophet Muḥammad has said, “Whoever persists in doing wrong deeds will race to the hellfire.” God has told the story about the sons of Adam: They each presented a sacrifice [to God]. It was accepted from one but not from the other. Said the latter, “I will surely slay thee.” Said the former, “God accepts only of the godfearing” (5:27).

This is a clear explanation for anyone who has a heart and reason or who gives ear and earnestly witnesses [the truth]. God never accepts worship from errant people; rather, He accepts only from those who fear Him. He did not accept the one son’s present, because he was disobedient to Him, whereas He accepted his brother’s present.

Anyone who claims that God accepts worship from the disobedient people and that He forgives the obstinate people, the Qur’ān shall belie him. He shall fall short of evidence. God has said, “God shall turn only towards those who do evil in ignorance, then shortly repent; God will return towards those; God is All-knowing, All-wise” (4:17). God has also said, “But God shall not turn towards those who do evil deeds until, when one of them is visited by death, he says, ‘Indeed now I repent’, neither to those who die disbelieving; for them We have prepared a painful chastisement” (4:18).

Have not you reflected on God’s verses when He mentioned the people who have done evil? He denies them repentance if they continue to do evil until death. About that God has said, “...when visited by death...,” in other words, when the person feels that the Angel of Death is close. God has said that this man will say, “Indeed now I repent.” The verse continues: “...neither to the dying disbeliever.” This means that God has addressed both the polytheists and the obstinate together in one verse. God has said, “For them We have prepared a painful chastisement.” In another chapter, God has said, “What, do they look for the angels to come to them, nothing less, or that thy Lord should come, or that one of thy Lord’s signs should come? On the day that one of thy Lord’s signs comes it shall not profit a soul to believe that never believed before, or earned some good in his belief” (6:158). The verses show that
there are two souls: one does not have faith and is a polytheistic soul, and the other is the faithful soul. God has said, “...never believed before, or earned good in his belief,” in other words, that he did not practise his faith.

4- It has been narrated that al-Ḥasan b. Abī al-Ḥasan al-Baṣrī visited Jābir b. Zayd at his deathbed. Al-Ḥasan told Jābir, “O, Abū al-Sha’thā’, say, ‘lā ilāha illā Allāh (There is no god but God),’” but Jābir was silent. Then al-Ḥasan repeated, “O, Abū al-Sha’thā’, say, ‘lā ilāha illā Allāh.’” Jābir did not reply. Then al-Ḥasan said, “Lā ḥawlah wa-lā quwwah illā bi-llāh (There is no power and no strength save from God), a man like Jābir did not have the bliss of saying ‘lā ilāha illā Allāh’ at the time of his death.” Then al-Ḥasan repeated for a third time, “O, Abū al-Sha’thā’, say, ‘lā ilāha illā Allāh.’” Then Jābir said, “We have been saying it for as long as it was accepted,” then he recited this verse: “What, do they look for the angels to come to them, not hing less, or that thy Lord should come, or that one of thy Lord’s signs should come? On the day that one of thy Lord’s signs comes it shall not profit a soul to believe that never believed before, or earned some good in his belief. Say: ‘Watch and wait; We too are waiting.’” (6:158). Then al-Ḥasan said, “By God, this is a learned man.”

5- If anyone claims that no Muslim from ahl al-iqrār will abide eternally in the fire, then he has misinterpreted the verse. “As for the wretched, they shall be in the Fire, wherein there shall be for them moaning and sighing, therein dwelling forever, so long as the heavens and earth abide, save as thy Lord will” (11:106-107). He then claimed that God made an exception regarding duration. If God forced them to be eternally in the fire, then there must also be an exception to the statement. It is not at all permissible to postulate that this exception in the verse does not make sense, is meaningless, or useless. We say to him: If you think that the saying of God is void of meaning, wisdom, and benefit, then you have misunderstood the just revelation, or you were wrong in your interpretation. This is because the exception here does not conform to what you thought and relied upon in your interpretation. The exception applies, however, to the hours on the day of judgment in which the people of the fire have not yet entered into it due to the knowledge of the almighty God that they are busy in those very hours of the day with dissuasion and the reckoning of their deeds. This is clear
from the verse: “That is a day mankind are to be gathered to, a day to witness, and We shall not postpone it, save to a term reckoned” (11:103-104). And He has said, “One day will come,” that day being the appointed day, when “no soul shall speak save by His leave; some of them shall be wretched and some happy” (11:105). And He has said, “As for the wretched, they shall be in the Fire, wherein there shall be for them moaning and sighing, wherein dwelling forever, so long as the heavens and earth abide, save as thy Lord will” (11:106-107). This means that the exception applies to what God will do concerning that day. This has been so explained by the people of knowledge. That day, the people will be busy at the beginning with the resurrection and judgment in terms of questioning and reckoning. If God did not make that exception after stating that the hellfire would be the designation for those people, then it would have been obligatory for those people to enter the fire and be eternally in chastisement right from the beginning of the day of judgment. The evidence of the firm truth of this interpretation is God’s verse: “save as thy Lord will,” meaning from that glorious day. God did not say, “save as those whom thy Lord willeth,” in which case the specifications of some of the people in the hellfire would apply. So understand and know that the almighty God did not say, “therein dwelling forever, so long as the heavens and the earth abide, save as thy Lord accomplishes what He desires from ahl al-iqrār.”

6- What is the evidence then that made the interpreter postulate such an argument that the errant Muslims are specified here not to be eternally in the fire, which is not the case for non-believers? If he alleges that God has said: “God forgives not that aught should be with Him associated. Less than that He forgives to whomsoever He will. Whoso associates with God anything has gone astray into far error” (4:116), and that this is proof that God does not forgive the polytheist, but He forgives ahl al-iqrār, we will say to him in response to this argument that God has said to the Jews and the Christians a similar thing in the verse: “you are mortals, of His creating; He forgives whom He will, and He chastises

---

Ahl al-iqrār refers to Muslims who mindfully state the jamsah, i.e., the shahādah, lā ilāha illā Allāh. They are also called ahl al-qiblah, the people who face the same direction in their prayers along with the rest of the Muslims. According to the Sunni doctrine, the person discussed is still a believer, but impious. According to the Ibāḍī doctrine, he is an ingrate (kāfir niʿmah). According to the Muʿtazili doctrine, he is a hypocrite. According to the Khārijī doctrine, he is an infidel.
whom He will” (5:18). Now your argument is without support, and evidently what we have shown of the falsehood of your argument is right.

7- If he argues that God has said in the verse: “Not one of you there is, but he shall go down to it; that for thy Lord is a thing decreed, determined. Then We shall deliver those that were godfearing; and the evildoers We shall leave there, hobbling on their knees” (19:71-72), we would say to him: There is no proof of your argument in the verse. “Shall go down to it” does not mean to enter into it. Do you not see what God says about Moses: “On the right way. And when he came to the waters of Midian he found a company of the people there drawing water” (28:23)? Although he went beside the water, he did not enter into it. For example, it can be said that your letter has been passed to me or your command and letter have been passed to me. This does not mean that the letter has entered inside me, but the meaning is that the letter has reached me and I have seen it. I swear that this person fabricated lies and violated what God’s Book has explained, when he argues that God will release some people from the hellfire and bring them into paradise. God has revealed his lies in the verse: “Not so; whoso earns evil, and is encompassed by his transgression ...,” meaning that whoever has been persistent in his wrongdoing until he died in that situation, “they are the dwellers in the fire, therein abiding [forever]” (2:81). Also, about the hypocrites from ahl al-iqrār and the polytheists, He says, “God has promised the hypocrites, men and women, and the unbelievers, the fire of Gehenna, therein to dwell forever. That is enough for them; God has cursed them; and there awaits them a lasting chastisement” (9:68).

What else then is required after this clarification as a cure for those who seek remedy in the verses of the Qur’ān? If he were to say that the Qur’ān is both abrogating and abrogated, and that what God has said in the verse, “Not so; whoso earns evil, and is encompassed by his transgression—those are the inhabitants of the Fire; there they shall dwell forever” (2:81) might be abrogated by this verse: “As for the wretched, they shall be in the Fire, wherein there shall be for them moaning and sighing, therein dwelling forever, so long as the heavens and earth abide, save as thy Lord will...” (11:106), because God has made exception in this verse, then we shall say to him: We have already given you our answer and argument regarding your enquiry on the interpretation of this verse.
8- The people of understanding also say that God may decide something, then He can make an exception later on, as is the case in the verse: “You shall enter the Holy Mosque, if God wills, in security, your heads shaved, your hair cut short” (48:27), the Almighty God does not mean in this an exception to decline what He has already stated regarding the Muslims’ entering the holy mosque. In fact, they did enter the holy mosque as He promised in security, heads shaved and hair cut short. The claim is that the abrogation has not been in the statement or the threat and promise. The abrogation has been in the command and interdiction. The true statement does not say such of something and then destroy it in a contradictory manner. Whoever states something and then states its contradiction is considered a liar. Also, whoever promised good or evil and did not fulfil it, he will be a liar in contradicting his statement. Or he might find new things on which he will change his mind. Then this testifies that the person who says this is a liar, ignorant and erring, and these are attributes that God transcends. As all that is said by this person is nonsense, all things that God says are true. Also, what He has mentioned about threat and promise can never be abrogated. God has said, “Not so; whoso earns evil, and is encompassed by his transgression—those are the inhabitants of the Fire; there they shall dwell forever” (2:81).

God has also spoken about their dwelling in the hellfire. God’s statements are always truthful. They cannot be abrogated. He has also said, “God has promised the hypocrites, men and women, and the unbelievers, the fire of hell, therein to dwell forever” (9:68). The verse does not say the punishment has an end. We have already said that God’s promise and threat are impossible for anyone to abrogate. Oh, how surprising in that they say that they listen to God say, “Those shall be the inhabitants of the fire, therein dwelling forever;” yet they say that the people of the fire can exit from it.

God has said, “God has promised the hypocrites, men and women, and the unbelievers, the fire of Gehenna, therein to dwell forever. That is enough for them; God has cursed them; and there awaits them Like a lasting chastisement.” And they say that the hypocrites, men and women, can exit from it! God has said, “Those shall be the inhabitants of the fire, therein dwelling forever.” And they say that it is evanescent. Is this not a contradiction to God’s Book and an opposition to His statements? God
has said, "And they say, 'The Fire shall not touch us save a number of days.' Say: 'Have you taken with God a covenant?' God will not fail in His covenant; or say you things against God of which you know nothing?" (2:80). God has rebuked the people who made such a statement, so that no one of this community (ummah) will follow them. Their claim did not benefit them because it has been ordained in God’s knowledge that they will go astray.

9- Some of the people of ahl al-iqrār listen to these appalling claims and false hopes by which they contradict the Holy Book and fabricate lies against God, and then they say that as a slander and leave what the Book of their Lord has stated, and make in their lies examples and produce sects from their innovation. They are as God has described: "And when it is said to them, 'Follow what God has sent down,' they say, 'No; but we will follow such things as we found our fathers doing.' What? And if their fathers had no understanding of anything, and if they were not guided?" (2:170). The curse of God be on them! How they were deluded! And God bears witness that they are indeed liars. We seek refuge in God from Satan’s seduction and from straying after guidance. You should, therefore, understand what I have mentioned to you, reflect on it, and ponder its sense.

10- You should also understand that people are of three types: believer, polytheist, and hypocrite. The believer is the one who believes in God, His prophet, and all the teachings that came to him from God. He is also obedient and never invalidates his good deeds by disobeying God. The hypocrite is the one who embraces Islam in his words, but leaves it by being sinful and disobedient. The hypocrite can be regarded as a disbeliever, because disbelieving is of two types: ingratitude and polytheism. There are two types of hypocrisy as well: that of the heart and that of deeds. Not all disbelievers are polytheists, because disbelieving in an entity might be by denying it or it might be by violating its principles through disobedience without necessarily rejecting or denying it. The evidence for this statement is what God has said of Abraham and those with him when they said to their people, “We are quit of you and that you serve, apart from God. We disbelieve in you” (60:4). Abraham and his followers did not disbelieve in their community as a denial of their affinity to them, but so as to oppose the rest of their community by their conduct. God has also said, “So whosoever disbelieves in idols and believes in God,
has laid hold of the most firm handle” (2:256). God does not intend in this verse to say that disbelieving in idols is to deny their existence, because it is impossible to say that an idol is not an idol. Certainly it is an idol. God means [to say] that disbelief in an idol (tāghūt) means disavowing its actions. The meaning of disbelieving should only be interpreted thusly in terms of the disbeliever who is among the Muslims. This disbelieving is not a form of denial of what they have ratified of the statement [of faith]. It is, however, their doing certain actions that are not in accordance with their entering the faith of obedience. Therefore we apply this same term to them as we do to the polytheists, though we differentiate between them in judgment, because we, if we fight with the polytheists, make it lawful to plunder their wealth and take as prisoners their women and children.

Similarly, we make lawful the killing of their deserters and wounded, even if the threat of their fighting has ceased. We do not allow them to inherit either in peace or in war. It is not permissible that a Muslim marry a woman of the people of the book if there is war between them and us. It is illegal to marry a woman to a person by God’s Book while this very woman is a spoil of war by God’s Book. Then there will be for the same woman two different judgments: marriage and spoil, and both of these conditions are legislated by God’s Book. This is why we say that it is illegal for this woman to be a wife, while at the same time we allow her to be a spoil of war with any of the above judgments. We do not apply any of these judgments to Muslims as long as they adhere to the statement [of faith]. We do not judge them the same as we do the polytheists because their situation is different. Similarly, we do not separate them by a label under which they can be grouped, due to the generality of the term “disbelieving”, which we have explained above. The hypocrites and the polytheists are both addressed in the following verse: “As for the unbelievers, theirs shall be the fire of Gehenna; they shall neither be done with and die, nor shall its chastisement be lightened for them. Even so We recompense every ungrateful one” (35:36). Both groups are disbelieving; those who become polytheists on account of their denial and those who become hypocrites by reason of their commitment to the statement [of faith].

11- So understand all that and know that the believer is God’s friend, and that God does not accept enmity to his friends, and that the hypocrite and the polytheist are the enemies of God, and that God does
not accept association with His enemies. The hypocrite is the brother of the polytheist and the polytheist is the brother of the hypocrite; the evidence of this is in God's Book: "Hast thou not regarded the hypocrites, saying to their brothers of the People of the Book who disbelieve, 'If you are expelled, we will go forth with you, and we will never obey anyone in regard to you. If you are fought against, we will help you'. And God bears witness that they are truly liars" (59:11). God has prohibited association with His enemies. He says in His perfect Book, "O believers, take not for friends a people against whom God is wrathful, and who have despaired of the world to come, even as the unbelievers have despaired of the inhabitants of the tombs" (60:13).

12- You should be wise and reflect on God's speech. You should remember His arguments to you in His Book; also, you should be aware of His grievous penalty, if you associate with His enemies and dissociate from His friends, or if you allow what He has prohibited and prohibit what He has allowed. In this case you enter into disobedience with regard to that which He has prohibited you, and you leave His obedience with regard to that which He has commanded you. God has the most eloquent argument against whomever does that. These are the dark ravines of ignorance.

I should also tell you that God has established for you a religion of truth. Whoever takes this path will be a Muslim, true in faith. Anyone who leaves it will be a criminal and a disbeliever. God has not excused His servants to leave anything He has commanded or to do anything He has prohibited. Whoever transgresses God's command by relinquishing his obedience or committing wrong deeds intentionally or unintentionally, God will not give him excuse for his ignorance after He made clear His rules, and distinguished between what is lawful and what is unlawful. A Muslim will not be regarded as a disbeliever except if he refrains from God's judgment and commits wrongdoings, whether intentionally or unintentionally. Do not claim ignorance to God after He sent to you a clarifying Prophet and revealed to you a clear book. God has said, "And We have brought to them a Book that We have well distinguished, resting on knowledge, a guidance and a mercy unto a people that believe" (7:52). He has said, "as also We have sent among you, of yourselves, a Messenger, to recite Our signs to you and to purify you, and to teach you the Book and the Wisdom, and to teach you that
you knew not” (2:151). What is your excuse then in claiming ignorance to God after the exposition and completion of the religion?

You should stand straight on the path to which God has called you and to which He has encouraged you. You should make no divisions in religion, because there is only one religion and one truth. God has said, “He has laid down for you as religion that He charged Noah with, and that We have revealed to thee, and that We charged Abraham with, Moses and Jesus: ‘Perform the religion, and scatter not regarding it’” (42:13). And He has said, “Surely this community of yours is one community, and I am your Lord; so serve Me” (21:92).

You may know the kind of disputes and vast differences which happened among the people who pray in the same direction (ahl al-qiblah), to the extent that they became enemies fighting each other and parties cursing one another, each party rejoicing in that view which is held within itself. We have known thus that they could not divide and that all of them will never reach justice while disagreeing, cursing and fighting. It is impossible that all of these parties shall reach the truth; rather, only one party will reach the truth. This is because truth is only one. Diversity is allowed only in the branches, which allow different interpretations, and these do not lead to a division or split. God has said, “What is there, after truth, but error? Then how are you turned about?” (10:32).

13- In reality and truth, you have to go back to the Book of God and the sunnah of the Prophet whenever there is any dispute. In that case we will be following their guidance and taking those who followed them as our examples. We do that as a kind of obedience to God’s commands and to His judgment in His Book in which He says, “If you should quarrel on anything, refer it to God and the Messenger, if you believe in God and the Last Day; that is better, and fairer in the issue” (4:59). You should not follow the path of mischief and draw wrong interpretations. God has said, “And that this is My path, straight; so do you follow it, and follow not divers paths lest they scatter you from His path. That then He has charged you with; haply you will be godfearing” (6:153). God’s path is that which He has established for His servants and approved for Himself, and commanded us to follow. This is believing in God and His messengers and what these brought from Him, and also believing in His clear Book, which He sent down to His trustworthy messenger, and also
rejecting any parallels and opposites to God. This path of God also means that you establish regular prayer, with its ablution, bowing, prostrating, and all other essential duties of prayer, like the supplements and limits and direction of the qiblah.\(^{(1)}\) It also means giving regular alms according to the way it is prescribed, and paying it to the needy. Similarly, it means performing the pilgrimage to the sacred house, provided that food and means of transportation are all available and no other obstruction is present on the journey. It also means that during the period of pilgrimage you avoid the obscenity, wickedness, and wrangling prohibited by God. It also means fasting in the month of Ramaḍān and refraining from sexual contact until the end of the month, and performing jihād in the cause of God. This is mandatory only with complete preparation of men and matter for fighting. You should also command good and prevent evil, establish the rules set by God for the weak as well as those for the strong, and those rules pertaining to the enemy as well as to the friend. Be the patron of those who uphold truth and justice in word and deed, avoid the most heinous deeds, and never persist in small wrongdoings.

You must be an enemy of anyone who is in opposition to the religion of the Muslims and disobeys the Creator and Sustainer of the worlds until he returns and asks for forgiveness from God for his disobedience.

14- In addition, one must do all one's duties towards God with either one's wealth or oneself. Also, one must divide the inheritance by the judgment of the Book\(^{(2)}\) and the sunnah.\(^{(3)}\) Additionally, you must mention the name of God for a sacrifice, carry out circumcision, cover your private parts, shave your pubic hair, wash (ghusl)\(^{(4)}\) any impurity including menstruation and sexual intercourse, cut your nails, comb your hair, wash the body of the deceased and wrap him with sheets, pray

---

\(^{(1)}\) The qiblah is the direction of prayer towards the Ka‘bah in Mecca. This is indicated in a mosque by the mihrāb. Originally, the direction of prayer was towards Jerusalem, but it was redirected towards Mecca after the Hijrah. This change is recorded in the Qur’ān; see al-Baqarah 2:142-150; \(E^f\), s.v. “Ḳibla”.

\(^{(2)}\) The holy Qur’ān.

\(^{(3)}\) The term sunnah literally means “trodden path”. It developed the meaning “customary practice” to indicate the specific actions and sayings of the Prophet Muḥammad; \(E^f\), s.v. “Sunna”.

\(^{(4)}\) Ghusl is the major ritual washing of the whole body to achieve a state of purity; \(E^f\), s.v. “Ghusl”.

for him, and bury him. You must also give the right testimony required from you at any time, and place your trust in those to whom it is due. Stop telling lies and being disloyal, and do not disobey your parents, whether they are righteous people or wicked, without associating with them in disobedience to God. You also must maintain good relations with your relatives, be kind to your neighbours, and maintain good ties of friendship. It means also that you must cast down your gaze away from the private areas (ʿawrāt)\(^1\), guard your private parts, and protect yourself from what is forbidden by God,\(^2\) and ask for permission when entering the houses of others.

15- You must remember God’s command to the believing women, that they cast down their gazes and guard their private parts, and reveal not their adornment save as is outwardly manifest, and let them cast their veils over their bosoms, and not reveal their adornment save to their husbands, or their fathers, or their husbands’ fathers, or their sons, or their husbands’ sons, or their brothers, or their brothers’ sons, or their sisters’ sons, or their women, or what their right hands possess, or such men as attend them who have no sexual desires, or children who have not yet attained knowledge of women. Nor should they stamp their feet so that their hidden ornament may be known, nor mourn in their misfortunes. It is necessary that you should know what is forbidden with regard to blood and property, what is allowed and lawful, and what is unlawful. Also, do not diminish the measure and the balance, and do not be dishonest in regard to property. You should also refrain from usury and unlawful consumption of the property of the orphans and the property of any other people. You are prohibited from thieving plunder.

You may not accuse a chaste man or woman of unchaste deeds. You may not engage in temporary marriage (mutʿah),\(^3\) marriage during the

---

\(^{1}\) The meaning of the word ‘awrah, in an Islamic sense, differs from its generic usage. It refers to parts of the human body that are forbidden to show in public; for men, the area of their ‘awrah is from the stomach to the knee, and for women, the area is the whole body except for the hands and the face.

\(^{2}\) That means avoiding adultery.

\(^{3}\) This is permitted by the law of the Ithnā ‘Ashāriyyah (twelvers Shīʿah), but it is not sanctioned elsewhere in Islam. Ibāḍī fiqh does not allow this marriage, but judging from the opinions of al-Rabīʿ b. Ḥabīb and Abū Ṣufrah ‘Abd al-Malik b. Abī Ṣufrah, such a marriage appears to have been permissible in the 2nd/8th century. See al-Sālimī, ‘A., Sharḥ al-jāmiʿ al-ṣaḥīḥ musnad al-imām al-Rabīʿ b. Ḥabīb, 3: 25.
Chapter Three

ʿiddah, [i.e. periods\(^1\) of waiting prescribed] before the second marriage for women, divorcing via proofs or evidence, reuniting without witnesses, anal sex, or sex after birthing or during menstruation. Also, you may not have sex with a captive female unbeliever or those whom you buy from Muslims. There should be no sexual intercourse with a pregnant women until she gives birth, nor with one who is not pregnant until she menstruates once.

16- Also, it is forbidden for concubines to have relations with fathers and sons. God prohibits you from marrying your mothers, your daughters, your sisters, your paternal and maternal aunts, your brothers’ daughters, your sisters’ daughters, your mothers who have reared you, your suckling sisters, your wives’ mothers, your stepdaughters who are in your care, being born of your wives you have been into – but if you have not yet been into them, it is not your fault – and the spouses of your sons who are of your loins, and taking two sisters together, unless it be a thing of the past. God and His Prophet prohibit men to marry a woman to her paternal or maternal uncle, because they are regarded as parents. As God says, “And he lifted his father and mother upon the throne” (12:100). And the maternal aunt was referred to as mother, and the Prophet called his uncle, al-ʿAbbās, his father. He informed some of his Companions, saying, “Bring to me my father, al-ʿAbbās.” He called him his father, although in reality he was his uncle.

17- Moreover, forbidden to you is the eating of carrion, blood, and the flesh of swines, as well as animals and birds that have claws. Also, you should not drink any fermented or intoxicating drink. The Prophet forbids the playing of instruments, wind as well as stringed and tambourines. Additionally, the forbidden foods include animals that are slaughtered in the name of anyone other than God, animals strangled or beaten to death, those that fall and die, those killed by goring with horns or mangled by wild beasts, those whom you slaughter and those sacrificed on the stones set up [for idols]. Forbidden also is the division (of meat) by raffling with arrows.\(^2\) It is necessary to leave all that is

\(^1\) The ʿiddah is basically the duration of widowhood, or the legal period of abstention from sexual relations before remarriage, imposed on widows or divorced women, or women whose marriages have been annulled, providing the marriage was consummated. The rules in fiqh governing the ʿiddah are complex, but basically derive from the Qurʾān; see al-Baqarah (2) and al-Ṭalāq (65); EI, s.v. “Idda”.

\(^2\) Arrows were used by Arabs prior to Islam for casting lots.
forbidden and to strive to implement all that has been prescribed.

However, you should establish justice between people whether they are strong or weak, humble or noble, hateful or preferrable to you, distant or near. God says, “O believers, be you securers of justice, witnesses for God, even though it be against yourselves, or your parents and kinsmen, whether the man be rich or poor; God stands closest to either. Then follow not caprice, so as to swerve; for if you twist or turn, God is aware of the things you do” (4:135).

In the religion of the Muslims, there is no injustice to a Muslim on account of liking and affinity, nor is there injustice to a profligate on account of disliking and dissociation. The Muslims refrain from these deeds. They are the people of justice and attainment. Therefore, this is God’s religion and the Muslims’ path. God promises that the followers of other paths will be in the hellfire, and it is the most evil home for the wrongdoers! God says, “But whoso makes a breach with the Messenger after the guidance has become clear to him and follows a way other than the believers’, him We shall turn over to what he has turned to and We shall roast him in Gehenna—an evil homecoming!” (4:115).

Therefore, let him fear God whosoever diverged from His path or declared something different than what He said. The Muslims are the most knowledgable and more understanding and perceptive to the justice of the *sunnah*. They are more honest in their love for God, and more careful to please Him. They know His friends and enemies best. Let not anyone divert from their path because he does not like them, and do not allow any profanation on their part by people who are actually more profane than them. They are God’s proof of His servants, His vice-regents on this earth. They also contain the abomination committed by innovators. They leave them in this situation and fight them over this innovation. They recognize good when it is concealed from others. They realize it fully and call to it those who have left it. No Muslim will be

---

(1) He is referring to the early Muslims. Prominent figures of Muslim orthodoxy prefer the first three centuries after the Prophet, calling them “excellence centuries.” The author is pointing to the early Ibāḍīs, as becomes evident in the following sentence.

(2) He is referring to the Battle of Ṣiffīn, when the Muhakkimah rejected the arbitration between ʿAlī and Muʿāwiyah.

(3) Muslim here refers to Ibāḍīs. The Ibāḍī authors often sought to demonstrate their good behavior in their writing. This is particularly so with scholars from the Middle Ages who also used their literary skill in part to demonstrate the character of their dogmas and sects.
deemed to withdraw except if he insists on a major sin, and no Muslim will be condemned except for a sin. This is because they do not judge anyone on the basis of their deeds unless they are certain about his deviation. Then they command him to take a middle stand. Rightly they are also obliged not to categorize any person’s act except for an average position of obedience. The reason the Muslims have revolted against people is that they breached the Book of their Lord and the sunnah of their Prophet when they followed desires and encouraged heresies.

18- Moreover, we remind you of what we have mentioned, that we are of the people and the people are of us, except a denying idolater, or a tyrant opposing God’s will, or someone who is doubtful about Him and whose disobedience is known, or a breacher of the religion of God to which we adhere, or one who is sceptical about the religion and persists in his sins.

God’s curse be on the people who submit to the will of the tyrants in order to obtain genealogical reputation and authority, and they do not consider the corruption in their religion as a result of deliberately committing oppression and as a result of inclining to evil, nullifying the penalties on whom they like and implementing them on those whom they hate, taking money from people without just reason and giving it to people who do not deserve it, shedding unlawful blood, and continuing to commit major sins. They appoint those who are well-known for their corruption and savage oppression of the people. In spite of all of this, they call them the leaders of the faithful and make them rulers of the Muslims. They do not prevent them from any oppression and do not resist obedience to them. They foster the wrongdoings of those people, and they themselves support them and ask the people to support them also. They obey them even in that which God forbids. When a transgressor like them raids against them and plunders their property, they would turn back to him and rely on him in their affairs and appoint him leader and ruler. They tend to support whoever overcomes them, and to be followers of whoever defeats them. They cannot discriminate between good and bad, and cannot distinguish between right guidance and misguidance. Their young have grown up with this habit, and their old have died with this habit also. Even the non-Arabs among them have been Arabised with the same views. They establish themselves via obedience to their rulers. In this they take the example from their
reciters, and they follow the footsteps of their scholars, the scholars of evil, the enemies of the Qur’ān, those ignorant of the value of the revelation, and those blind to the justice of interpretation. They delude the masses and the populace and the weak among the people who do not give any attention to value, be it good or bad, and cannot distinguish between right and wrong. They deceive them by the evidence they show them from the fabricated traditions and from the verses that read, “O believers, obey God, and obey the Messenger and those in authority among you” (4:59).

I say to them, if you think that there is generality in the verse here, I say it is not general, because in another verse God has specified the destination of those who obey the rulers who transgress. God has said, “And lean not on the evildoers, so that the Fire touches you—you have no protectors apart from God—and then you will not be helped” (11:113).

This verse is more specific than the previous one. In the principles of interpretation and legislation, the particularity is proof against the generality, whereas the generality is not proof against the particularity. This is the opinion of the religious leaders (‘ulamāʾ) and the people of the truth. Furthermore, the word can be particular while on the surface it is general, as in the verse in which God has said, “God was well pleased with the believers when they were swearing fealty to thee under the tree” (48:18).

Superficially, the speech in the verse is common to all the believers, but of course, the people in the verse are those special people of whom God knew what was in their hearts, and He sent down tranquility to them. This good pleasure was not for the people of whom God knew what was in their hearts was displeasing to Him. God does not like those who disobey him. The people of the tree, however, were of different types. Some of them faulted and misdirected one another, then they also intentionally shed the blood of one another. Confusion then arises regarding the intention of each, as it is impossible to hold that both the killer and the victim were right. Similarly, it is baseless to say that the

---

(1) I.e. Muslim leaders.
(2) The people of the tree are those Companions who swore fealty to the Prophet under a tree in Ḥudaybiyah (60 km from Mecca) in the year 630 AD. This event is called bay’at al-riḍwān.
deceiver and the deceived are both right. This is simply impossible, and this saying is never rational, because these are contradictory terms that cannot be grouped into one homogenous situation. God has said, “What, shall we make those who have surrendered like to the sinners? What ails you then, how you judge?” (68:35-36). If someone says that all of these were Muslims, we will reply to him that we agree with you only if you intend the meaning of Islam to be the name and nothing else. Not everyone called a Muslim is faithful in God’s regard. Do you not see what God says in this regard? “The Bedouins say, ‘We believe.’ Say: ‘You do not believe; rather say, ‘We surrender’; for belief has not yet entered your hearts” (49:14).

However, if you intend the meaning of Islam to be faith in God’s regard, then our answer to this has been made clear in this outline to those who have intellect and guidance. God has said, “Not equal are the blind and the seeing man, those who believe and do deeds of righteousness, and the wrong-doer. Little do you reflect” (40:58).

19- This proves that speech, though it is particular, may look general, as in the verse about ‘Ād’s wind in which God has said, “...destroying everything by the commandment of its Lord” (46:25). Of course, the wind did not destroy the sun, the moon, the sky, the earth, the mountains, and the sea. God has said, “destroying everything,” though all of these were things and they were not destroyed by ‘Ād’s wind. However, the meaning of this word is: ‘Ād’s wind destroyed everything it came across. Likewise, in the story of Bilqīs, God has said,(2) “She has been given of everything, and she possesses a mighty throne” (27:23). Bilqīs was not given Solomon’s kingdom or other things, such as falling stars, the roaming winds, and the touring clouds. Externally, this speech is general, but in fact it is particular. Language can express this all. For example, ‘Antarah b. Shaddād al-‘Absī(3) says:

“Visited by every virgin rain cloud bountiful are showers that have left every puddle gleaming like a silver dirham.”(4)

---

(1) ‘Ād is the pre-Islamic Arab tribe in the south Arabian region of al-Aḥqāf, who built monuments on mountain tops.
(2) The pre-Islamic queen of Sheba (a place spelled in a variety of ways in Arabic) contemporary with King Solomon. She is mentioned by name in the Qur’ān; the exegetes identify her with the queen in Qur’ān, al-Naml 27:23.
(3) A jāhilī poet, who died around the year 615 AD.
(4) Arberry, Seven Odes, 180.
‘Antarah did not know every cloud that was impregnated with rain. Likewise, Ṭarafah b. al-‘Abd al-Bakrī(1) says:

“They say I reach all that I hope, and when the stars disappear
I will always have a clue.”

It is well known that he would not reach all his hopes, as his friends describe him. How could that be, when he said:

“There are traces yet of Khawlah in the stony trace of Thahmad apparent like the tattoo-marks seen on the back of the hand.”(2)

At Rawdat Du’mī and Ḥā’il’s surrounding, I have cried and cried for a long while.”

This indicates that what he wanted was that the remains of Khawlah would be full of life; however, it became empty of any aspect of life. He also said:

“How is it with me, that I observe my cousin Mālik, whenever I approach him, sheering off and keeping his distance.”(3)

Ṭarafah wishes that his cousin were more approachable. In contrast, he became distant from him. Also, ‘Antarah said:

“I know what is happening today and what passed yesterday, but as for knowing what tomorrow will bring, there I am utterly blind.”(4)

It is well known that ‘Antarah did not know all the things of today and yesterday. On the other hand, he wanted the things that only he himself knew and not all the other things that were unknown to him. Examples of this type are numerous in the language of the Arabs and their poetry. The Qurʾān was revealed in their language. God has said, “O believers, obey God, and obey the Messenger and those in authority among you” (4:59).

So this verse is specific to righteous people and not those who stray, whose deeds are evil. God does not give an order and then institute punishment for doing that particular deed. God has said, “And lean not on the evildoers, so that the Fire touches you…” (11:113). If God commanded us to obey them, of course he would not punish us for relying on them. Also, He has said to His Messenger, “and obey not him

---

(1) Ṭarafah was an Arab jāhilī poet.
(2) Arberry, Seven Odes, 83.
(3) Arberry, Seven Odes, 87.
(4) Arberry, Seven Odes, 118.
whose heart We have made neglectful of Our remembrance so that he follows his own lust, and his affair has become all excess” (18:28). Also, God has said, “And obey not one of them, sinner or unbeliever” (76:24). We join with the Prophet in following what God has ordered him, apart from what has been proved to relate only to him. If it were the case that the act is peculiar to him, then there is no excuse for you and us to obey anyone who has gone astray. The tyrant is a denier, and he errs. Both attributes are associated with him. The Prophet said, “Do not obey anyone who commands you to do evil; God created all of you.” God said to his friend Abraham, ”I make you a leader for the people” (2:124). Abraham asked, “And of my seed?” Allah said, “My covenant shall not reach the evildoers” (2:124). God rejects the evildoer as leader. And God informed Abraham and made sure that he knew that perfectly.

Anyone violating the justice of the Book(1) should fear God when saying untruthful things, incorrect sayings, and words twisted from their normal reference into ambiguity. As God has said about them in His Book, “It is He who sent down upon thee the Book, wherein are clear verses that are the essence of the Book, and others ambiguous. As for those in whose hearts is deviation, they follow the ambiguous part, desiring dissension, and desiring its interpretation; yet none know its interpretation except God. And those firmly rooted in knowledge say, ‘We believe in it; all is from our Lord;’ yet none remembers, but men possessed of minds” (3:7).

20- You should seek safety for yourself and beware of slipping into religious misjudgment, which leads to humiliating torture. Do not be lure by libertines who sell the hereafter for the life of this world. Surely, the life of this world deceives and infatuates its seekers. Moreover, it is vicious to its followers as well as deceitful to those who ask for more. It is so destructive to those who want to possess it, because it appears to be pleasure, but in reality it is vainglory. What is allowed (ḥalāl) is set for reckoning and what is forbidden is set for punishment. What seems to you abundant is meagre, and what is honourable is humiliating. The accumulators are plundered. Life’s inhabitants are strangers. The beginning seems to be the path toward the fulfillment of dreams and ambitions, but the end is death.

21- Listener! Definitely, you have true knowledge about life and you have unveiled the authentic enlightenment. Truly, how you do not

(1) I.e. the Qurʾān.
know that, after you have seen it with your own eyes, heard it with your own ears, perceived it with your own heart, and declared it with your own tongue! When you are affected by your father’s death, stricken by the loss of your brother, deprived of your grandfather, or devastated by your son’s loss; when you keep on grieving over the loss of your property, and remain confused and worried about your ailments. Even when you wake up from this illusion, you go astray, immersed in running your monetary affairs and forgetful about what once marred your life. Today’s business makes you unaware of what is awaiting you tomorrow. What you possess pressures you to be inattentive to yourself. Worldly existence is the cause of negligence of religious duties. Immaculate deliberation does not draw your attention to your duty, as though the house you live in makes you forget past adversities, such as the loss of brothers. How come you are unaware of the fact that one day you will be taken away from comfort carried in a coffin? You will be placed in a grave, and then you will be responsible for your deeds. In spite of all this, you are still so absorbed to the degree that you completely forget your sin, death, and resurrection. When your days are over, you are all in a sweat, and when you are so frail and too feeble to moan, you become bewildered and overwhelmed. You, then, are repentant of your unforgivable folly and misjudgment. Consequently, your sorrow is augmented and you reach a hopeless end, when you become confined to your ignorance by your erroneous judgment. You are doomed to suffer in hell and lose the felicity of paradise.

22- Finally, ask forgiveness from God for your sins. Make a strenuous effort for the salvation of your soul before death and the cessation of toil and hope. Having said that, may God almighty help you and us to obey Him, and bestow on you and us His blessing. He is forgiving, compassionate, and capable of doing what He likes. Thanks be to God, Lord of all beings, and may He send His blessing on Muhammad and his chaste family, as well as on all the prophets, messengers, high ranking angels, and His pious worshippers, the inhabitants of heaven and earth. Peace be upon them all.
CHAPTER FOUR

IBĀḌISM IN EARLY ISLAMIC IRAN, CENTRAL ASIA AND INDIA

4.1 Siyar and Ibāḍī History in the East

The aim of this chapter is to provide an overview of the three siyar presented in the previous chapters. They come from the Ibāḍī tradition, which is the source of a major part of ʿaqīdah. Classical Ibāḍī siyar are usually described as basic references and chiefly theological studies, but in fact they are lively historical documents that shed light on the development of Ibāḍism. The objective is to demonstrate that siyar are valuable sources for improving our understanding of the major doctrinal and historical developments in Asia during the 4th and 5th/10th and 11th centuries, which marked the birth of the siyar.

In order to place these siyar in their specific historical and geographical contexts, it is helpful to begin after the battle of Nahrawān (38/658). In particular, four aspects should be considered:

1- Ibāḍī history in the East, which includes the study of:
   a. the historical background of the Muḥakkimah and their relations with the East between 38 and 62/658 and 681,
   b. the schisms among the Muḥakkimah and the settlements in the East after 62/681,
   c. the Omanis and their adherence to Ibāḍism, namely the relationship between tribe and thought in early Islam, and specifically the relationship between Ibāḍism and the Azd clan,
   d. and other aspects of the relationships between Ibāḍism and the East.

2- The historical geography of Ibāḍī settlements in the East at the time of the siyar

3- The socio-political situation in Oman during the period of the siyar

4- The chronology of the imams in Oman
Al-Shahrastānī reports the events after the battle of Nahrawān (38/658): “After the Khawārij were defeated, two of them went to Oman, two to Kirmān,\(^1\) two to Sīstān,\(^2\) two to al-Jazīrah,\(^3\) one to Tall Mawzān, and two others to Yemen.”\(^4\) He also reports, “...until now they are still in these locations.” One could argue that these accounts highlight the beginning of the relationship between Ibāḍism and the regions of Eastern Mesopotamia. The aim of this chapter is to outline diachronic and synchronic discussions about the development of Ibāḍī thought in Eastern Mesopotamia, Iran and Central Asia during the Middle Ages. I am concerned with both the historical and the intellectual dimensions of Ibāḍī activity. With regard to the former dimension, I investigate the Ibāḍī and Omani historical contacts with other Asian regions, studying the extent of Omani imams’ and religious scholars’ contacts with other regions outside Iran. I emphasize Oman’s significant influence on some of the events in the historical period of the Middle Ages. With regard to the latter dimension, I trace the expansion of Ibāḍī thought throughout Asia.

After the battle of Nahrawān the lands east of Mesopotamia became the centre of some of the Khārijī movements.\(^5\) The battle of Nahrawān did not lead to the end of the Muḥakkimah. For ‘Alī, it was a doubtful victory, given that he had merely rid himself of the worst fanatics, while the majority remained ready to break out in rebellion at any moment.\(^6\) The surviving followers from the battle settled in two

---

1. Kirmān is a province in southern central Iran; see Le Strange, *The Lands of the Eastern Caliphate*, 299-321.
2. Sīstān (Sīstān) and its province is in the Hilmand Valley of western Afghanistan; see Le Strange, *Lands of the Eastern Caliphate*, 334-351.
3. Al-Jazīrah is a province in upper Mesopotamia; see Le Strange, *Lands of the Eastern Caliphate*, 86.
cities, Kufah and Basra, known as Khawārij al-Baṣrah and Khawārij al-Kūfah. They flourished less in Syria than in Iraq, and Kufah and Basra were the most prosperous. The so-called Khārijī school belonged to the Basran rather than to the Kufan milieu, and its members were not concerned with defending privileges gained from participation in the conquest of Iraq. Nevertheless, a certain continuity is to be noted regarding the ideology by which the Muḥakkimah party had rationalized their position, and this led the group to be known also as Khawārij.

This chapter focuses on four aspects of Ibāḍī history in the regions east of Mesopotamia: firstly, on the historical background of the Muḥakkimah and their relations with regions east of Mesopotamia between 38 and 62/658 and 681; secondly, on the schisms among the Muḥakkimah and settlements after 62/681; thirdly, on certain aspects of the relationships between Ibāḍism and the East; and finally, on the historical geography of Ibāḍī settlements in the East until the 6th/12th century.

4.2 The historical background of the Muḥakkimah

Let us return to the historical background of the Muḥakkimah leaders’ communications in the eastern regions in the years after the battle of Nahrawān (38-61/658-687), which is the year of the death of the Muḥakkimah leader Abū Bilāl Mirdās b. Ḥudayr. We can trace the


(2) Wellhausen, Religio-Political Factions, 14.

(3) The last rebellion of the Kufan Khawārij under their leaders ʿHayyān b. Zabyān al-Sulamī and Muʿādh b. Juwayn al-Ṭāʾī took place in 58/677, when Ḥayyān b. Zabyān al-Sulamī was elected as caliph and his companions pledged allegiance to him. Ḥayyān proposed going to Hulwān to assemble all the like-minded supporters; in the subsequent battle which took place between Kufah and Rayy, they were killed. See al-Ṭabarī, The History of al-Ṭabarī, 18: 192-196. As to their revolt in Kufah, a sīrah from the people of the Maghrib to Imam al-Ṣalt b. Mālik records their early leaders, starting with Ziyād b. Kharāsh, moving on to Tamīm b. Maslamah, and finally dealing with ʿAli al-Aʿraj; see Al-Salimi, The Omani siyar as a Literary Genre, 23. Concerning the Ibāḍis in Iraq, there were Ibāḍī theologians from Kufah who were followed by the Nukkār of North Africa. See Ennami, Studies in Ibāḍism, 250.


principles of Ibāḍism in the East before the formation and crystallization of Khārīji ideology. Their first principle is the *hijrah* (emigration). This term emerged when a number of the Muḥakkimah were determined to leave their homes and called themselves emigrants (*muhājirūn*), and the place where they went was called *muhājar* or *dār hijrah*.(1) Their second principle is *takfīr* (charge of disbelief), whereby they speak of themselves as professors of the unity of God (*muwaḥḥidūn*) and call other Muslims polytheists. For this reason, they considered the latters’ land as a land of war.(2) Their third principle is *istiʿrāḍ*, killing on religious grounds.(3) The communication between the Muḥakkimah and the eastern lands began soon after the battle of Nahrawān. Their movement started with insurrections(4) against the central government, since they had rejected the arbitration between ʿAlī and Muʿāwiyah. At the beginning of these insurrections, in 38/658, a certain Khirrīt b. Rāshid al-Nājī separated from ʿAlī, because the arbitrator appointed by ʿAlī had deposed ʿAlī. Even the people of Khūzistān(5) went over to him in the hopes of ridding themselves of the oppressive poll tax (*jizyah*). Some even had the boldness to expel ʿAlī’s governor from Fārs, and the situation remained like this until Ziyād b. Abīh, who was sent to Basra by ʿAlī, succeeded in driving them away. Khirrīt’s insurrection was routed by Maʿqil b. Qays, and Khirrīt was slain.(6) Al-Balādhurī and Ibn al-Athīr mention some insurrections in the immediate aftermath of Nahrawān. Ashras b. ʿAwf al-Shaybānī took 200 men to Daskara(7) and was killed in Rabiʿ II 38/September 658. Hilāl b. ʿUllafah of the Taym Ribāb and his brother Mujālid led more than 200 men in Māsbadhān(8) and died in Jumādā I 38/October 658. Ashhab b. Bishr of the Bajilah led 180 men

---

(1) They used Qurʾānic proof-texts to support these arguments; Qurʾān, 4:100, 8:74. See also Elʿ, s.v. “Hījra”; al-ʿAshʿarī, *Maqāলāt al-islāmiyyīn*, 8.
(2) Elʿ, s.v. “Khārijījītes”.
(3) Elʿ, s.v. “Iṣṭiʿrāḍ”.
(4) Watt gives a list of their revolts, from their first uprising to 680; Watt, “Khārijite Thought in the Umayyad Period”, 215-231.
(5) Khūzistān is a province in eastern Iran, presently known as ʿArabistān; Le Strange, *Lands of the Eastern Caliphate*, 232.
(7) Daskarah is a village northeast of Nahrawān; Le Strange, *Lands of the Eastern Caliphate*, 80.
and was killed at Jarjarāya\(^{(1)}\) on the Tigris on 11 Jumādā II/November 658. Saʿīd b. Qufal al-Timī of Tim Allāh led 200 men to Bandanījān\(^{(2)}\) and was killed in Rajab 38/December 658. Abū Maryam al-Saʿdī al-Tamīmī led an army, mainly composed of mawālī\(^{(3)}\) and was killed in Bādūrayā\(^{(3)}\) in Ramadān 38/February 659.\(^{(4)}\) Then in 41/661, 500 Khārijī horsemen, under the leadership of Farwah b. Nawfal al-Ashjāʿī, escaped the slaughter at Nahrawān, because they did not take part in the battle and withdrew to Bandanījān near Daskara in Shahrazūr.\(^{(5)}\) Thereafter, in 42/662, the Azraqite leader Qaṭarī b. al-Fujāʾāh\(^{(6)}\) joined in the early Umayyad conquest in Persia with al-Muhallab b. Abī Ṣufrah\(^{(7)}\) and ‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Samurah to raid Sīstān, under the command of Basra’s governor, ‘Abd Allāh b. ‘Āmir.\(^{(8)}\) The Khārijī insurrection, however, continued until 43/663, when the Khawārij of Kufah revolted under al-Mustawrad b. ‘Ullafah, who was killed in Daylamāyā.\(^{(9)}\) In 49/669, when al-Mughīrah b. Shuʿbah was the governor of Kufah, Shabīb b. Bajrah al-Ashjāʿī rebelled; then al-Mughīrah sent a force led by Kathīr b. Shihāb al-Ḥārithī, and Shabīb was killed in Azerbaijan.\(^{(10)}\) Afterwards, in 58/678, Ḥayyān b. Ẓabyān al-Sulamī, a Khārijī, who had been wounded at Nahrawān but had been allowed by ʿAlī to return to Kufah, left the town and proceeded to Rayy\(^{(11)}\) with ten companions, and that was the last great uprising originating in Kufah. Kufah was in fact predominantly

---

\(^{(1)}\) Jarjarāya was the capital of the district of lower Nahrawān, close to the Tigris; Le Strange, *Lands of the Eastern Caliphate*, 37.

\(^{(2)}\) Bandanījān is a village northeast of Nahrawān; Le Strange, *Lands of the Eastern Caliphate*, 63, 80.


\(^{(5)}\) Shahrazūr is a town north of Ḥulwān, on the border between Iraq and Iran. The ruins of the old city are now known as Yāsīn Tāppah; Le Strange, *Lands of the Eastern Caliphate*, 248-298.

\(^{(6)}\) *EI*, s.v. “Kaṭarī b. al-Fudjāʿīa”.

\(^{(7)}\) *EI*, s.v. “Muhallabīds”.


\(^{(11)}\) A town in western Iran, in the northeastern corner of the province known as Jibāl; Le Strange, *Lands of the Eastern Caliphate*, 214-215.
Shīʿī, and much less time was required to extirpate the Khawārij there than in Basra, where the party was able to assert itself in spite of all persecution for twenty years.\(^1\) Also in 58/678, one famous leader in Basra, ʿUrwh b. Udayyah, was killed by ʿUbayd Allāh b. Ziyād, who was the governor of Basra.\(^2\) Some time after 58/678 Abū Bilāl emigrated to Ahwāz,\(^3\) but was killed in 61/681 in Āsak.\(^4\)

This historical overview is relevant to our study. The ideas expressed in early Islamic movements are linked to socio-political contexts. The connection between ideologies and politics in Islamic societies is particularly crucial for our understanding.\(^5\)

The above list of insurrections gives an impression of the pattern of movement in early Islam. It is remarkable that the leaders of the Khārijī movement continued to communicate in Iraq and the regions east of Mesopotamia, and some of them took part in hijrah or rebellions. Yet their movement had not yet coalesced into an organization under one leadership. It remained disjointed under separate leaders. This might be because they viewed the Caliphate as an office that was taken by force. Thus they started to look for places to launch their rebellion. Wellhausen questions why the Khawārij did not opt for the Arabian Desert as a place of refuge, and instead chose non-Arab regions, like the area of Jūkhā (on the northeastern side of the Tigris), Ahwāz, Media, and Fārs.\(^6\) Of course, they had in fact lost their contact with the desert tribes through the hijrah, through emigration to the garrison cities, and through enlisting in the Muslim army.\(^7\) Wellhausen explains that they were mostly military stipendiaries of the state, muqātilah; they were continually attracted and encouraged by the success of their jihād. Once accustomed to a life of leisure in urban centres, they did not want to return to the Arabian steppes. Yet they were driven to engage in public protest, even at the

---

\(^1\) Brünnow, Kharijites under the First Omayyads, 14.

\(^2\) On Abū Bilāl’s death, see al-Ṭabarī, The History of al-Ṭabarī, 18: 197; Ibn al-Athīr, al-Kāmil, 3: 255. Ibn al-Athīr mentions another report according to which ʿUrwh was killed in 61/681 after the death of his brother Abū Bilāl; al-Kāmil, 3: 304.

\(^3\) It is in the province of Khūzistān and was the capital city of the region; Le Strange, Lands of the Eastern Caliphate, 232.

\(^4\) Āsak is a town in Ahwāz; Le Strange, Lands of the Eastern Caliphate, 244, 247; al-Ṭabarī, The History of al-Ṭabarī, 19: 91; Ibn al-Athīr, al-Kāmil, 3: 303.

\(^5\) See Goldziher, Muslim Studies, 1: 40-97.

\(^6\) Wellhausen, Religio-Political Factions, 12.

\(^7\) Wellhausen, Religio-Political Factions, 12.
expense of their lives.\(^1\) Therefore, it is conceivable that they gradually started to lose tribal support (‘\(\text{aṣabīyah}\)) on account of their being stubborn proponents of the celebrated “equality”, which had already been adopted by the \(mawālī\). Brünnow may be correct in saying that the Khawārij did not come from the Quraysh or the Thaqīf or the Aṇṣār; rather, they first arose among the politically underprivileged.\(^2\) It is also to be noted that the lands of the East were used by different movements to gain support against the central state.

4.3 The schisms among the Muḥakkimah and the settlements in the East

The year 61/680 marks the beginning of the doctrinal transformation of Islamic sects, not only the Muḥakkimah, but also the Shī‘ite, because this period witnessed the killing of al-Ḥusayn at the hands of the governor of Iraq, ῤUbayd Allāh b. Ziyād.\(^3\) From this time onward the regions east of Mesopotamia gradually became an open field for early Islamic movements, not only Khawārij and Shī‘ah, but also for other infiltrating sects related to other movements.\(^4\)

We now have an understanding of the commencement of the schisms among the Khawārij.\(^5\) The Bakrīs, Abū Ṭālūt, Abū Fudayk, and Ibn al-Aswad, and the Ḥanafīs, including Najdā b. ‘Āmir al-Ḥanāfī,\(^6\) settled in Yamama and later rebelled. The Tamīmīs, Nāfi‘ b. al-Azraq, ‘Abd Allāh b. Ṣaffār, ‘Abd Allāh b. Ibāḍ, and Hanẓalah b. Bayhas, went to Mecca to support Ibn al-Zubayr.\(^7\) This was the first development

---

\(^1\) Watt, “Khārijite Thought in the Umayyad Period”, 217.
\(^2\) Brünnow, \(Kharijites under the First Omayyads\), 17.
\(^3\) On the death of al-Ḥusayn, see al-Ṭabarī, \(The History of al-Ṭabarî\), 19: 91; Ibn al-Athīr, \(al-Kāmil\), 3: 266; al-İṣfahānī, \(Maqātil al-ṭālibīyīn\), 78.
\(^5\) On the schisms among the Khawārij, see for example, al-Mubarrad, \(al-Kāmil\), 2: 213; \(E\text{f}'\), s.v. “Khāridjītes”.
\(^6\) At the beginning of the schism among the Muḥakkimah, al-Mubarrad recounts that they followed three leaders: Nāfi‘ b. al-Azraq, Abū Bayhas, and ‘Abd Allāh b. Ibāḍ; the Najdiyah and the Sufrīyah, however, followed Ibn Ibāḍ; \(al-Kāmil\), 2: 213; see also Cook, \(Early Muslim Dogma\), 89-90.
\(^7\) Regarding the Khārijī tribes, see Ibn Khaldūn, \(Tārīkh\), 3: 310; Ibn Khaldūn points out that the Khawārij had been of one view, and that they differed only in their interpretation; Ibn Khaldūn, \(Tārīkh\), 3: 311. We should remember that the heresiographical works hold
beyond the original doctrinal kernel of the Basran Muḥakkimah. The second step was the split from Ibn al-Zubayr, while Ibn al-Azraq was the first to split from the Basran Muḥakkimah leaders. Subsequently, the Muḥakkimah were composed of two groups, the first group known as al-Qaʿadah and the second as the Khawārij. There were differences of opinion between those who remained at home and those who adopted radical insurrection with the Khawārij and did not fight on the path of God. A party called the Ibāḍiyah was rejected, and the Basran Muḥakkimah was mostly accepted. In Basra, however, the Ibāḍiyah found little support and Ibn al-Azraq attracted the largest number of followers. Najdah b. ‘Āmir and his followers, on the other hand, went to Yamama and spread their doctrines. The followers of both Nāfi b. al-Azraq and Najdah b. ‘Āmir al-Hanafi were not so much theologians as essentially political and military activists. Hence their pattern of behaviour remained contentious, and a great many non-Arab people joined them. By the end of the 1st/7th century the Azāriqah had already different views regarding the nature, divisions, and numbers of the Khawārij. Al-Asḥarī says that there were originally four groups of Khawārij: Ibāḍiyah, Šufrīyah, Najdīyah, and Azāriqah; the other sub-sects were within the Šufrīyah; see al-Asḥarī, Maqālāt, 18. On the other hand, al-Shahrastānī states that the Khawārij consisted of six groups, adding the ‘Ajāridah and the Thaʿallibah; see al-Shahrastānī, Milal wa-al-nihal, 86; see also al-Maqrīzī, Khīṭat, 4: 180. For other accounts of the Khārijī sub-sects, see Elie Salem, Political Theory and Institutions of the Khawārij, 25, or the sīrah from the people of the Maghrīb to Imam al-Salt b. Mālik, referred to in al-Salimi, The Omani siyar as a Literary Genre, 23. It gives a chronological list of the Khawārij in Basra: Nāfi b. al-Azraq, Najdah b. ’Āmir, ’Aṭliyah b. Ziyād, Šāliḥ, Shabīb, Abū Bayhas, ’Abd Allāh b. Ṣaffār, Jahm b. Ṣafwān, al-Thaʿlabī, Shuʿayb al-Kirmānī, Dāwūd, Maṭar, Maṇṣūr, al-Ḥaydām, ‘Azīz, Ḥamzah, Abū Ḥishāq, and Abū ‘Awf. 

2. Al-Asḥarī, Maqālāt, 6; al-Shahrastānī, Milal wa-al-nihal, 89; Efʿ, s.v. “Azāriqā”.
3. This is in contrast to khurāj. The name Qaʿadah refers to people who stay at home, unlike the Khawārij, who are people who go out. See Efʿ, s.v. “al-Ibāḍiyya”.
6. Ibn Khaldūn provides relevant details regarding the Najdīyah; see Tārīkh, 3: 314; see also Ibn al-ʾAthīr, al-ʿKāmil, 3: 352; al-Shahrastānī, al-Milāl wa-al-nihal, 91; al-Asḥarī, Maqālāt, 11. Even more interesting and relevant is al-Mubarrad’s hypothesis that the views of the Najdīyah and the Šufrīyah were in line with Ibn Ibāḍ at that time; see al-Mubarrad, al-ʿKāmil, 2: 213.
become extinct. Eventually, from a heresiographical perspective, the Khawārij were split into more or less twenty groups. There was nothing to unify them ideologically except two theories: the principle that the Caliph need not necessarily be from the Quraysh, and the idea that the importance of deeds stems from the fact that they are an element of the Faith.

Through the schism among the Khawārij, the regions east of Mesopotamia became places of refuge and migration, and in the heartland of the Caliphate, i.e. Arabia and Syria, the Khawārij gradually disappeared. Each group, in seceding, crystallized its own ideologies. The heresiographical literature gives us limited information on their evolution and activity in the East. Tracing their migration to the East may help us to comprehend the dimensions of their thought as well as their settlements. The Azāriqah were the first group to play a role among the Khawārij in the East. Their rebellion was about collecting taxes from certain regions. Their insurrection continued over the second half of the 1st/7th century, beginning in Ahwāz and Fārs, and lasted until they were destroyed by al-Muhallab. Their tendency to rebel persisted during the Umayyad period, and their last insurrection was led by Ṣubayḥ, the mawlā of Siwār b. al-Asʿar al-Māzinī, during the reign of Hishām b. ʿAbd al-Malik. However, Qaṭarī b. al-Fujā’ah kept a firm hold on the province of Fārs, as indicated by the coins minted in his name with the title Commander of the Faithful, which circulated in several towns in Fārs in the years 69-75/688-695. Although most of the Azāriqah had been killed, subsects survived, namely al-Khāzimīyah and al-Bī’dīyah. Yāqūt reports that members of the Azāriqah settled in a place called Albānu, between Kabul and Ghaznīn, and that there were scholars, artists, and traders among them. Moreover, Ibn Ḥazm notes that some Azāriqah had settled in Andalusia; their leading scholar was Abū Ismāʿīl al-Baṭḥī. Ibn Khaldūn considers that the leaders of both the Carmathians and the Zanj rebellion were Azāriqah.

---

(1) Ibn Khaldūn, Tārīkh, 3: 345.
(2) Al-Baghdādí, al-Faqīr bawma al-firāq, 55.
(3) Wellhausen traces their rebellion in detail in Religio-Political Factions, 45-78; see also Brünnow, Khārijites under the First Omayyads, 11.
(4) There is doubt whether Ṣubayḥ was a Ṣufrī or a Najdī; see Ibn Ḥazm, Fiṣal, 3: 190.
(6) Van Ess, Frühe muʿtazilitische Hāresiographie, 68, 69.
(7) Yāqūt, Muʿjam al-buldān, 1: 244.
(8) Ibn Ḥazm, Fiṣal, 3: 189.
(9) Ibn Khaldūn, Tārīkh, 4: 37, 183.
However, there is no proof from Ibn Khaldūn’s notes that he described the Carmathians as Khawārij, though he may well have regarded the radical parties – i.e. those who supported or took part in insurgencies – as Khawārij.

The Najdiyah also tried to expand their influence in the East after they had spread throughout most of Arabia. Najdah b. Āmir sent ‘Aṭiyyah b. al-Aswad to Sīstān, and soon after a successful recruitment campaign in Marw the Najdiyah split(1) into three groups, led by Abū Fudayk, ‘Aṭiyyah b. al-Aswad,(2) and Najdah b. Āmir. The most successful group were al-‘Aṭawīyah,(3) the followers of ‘Aṭiyyah, who spread their thought in many settlements, mostly in Sīstān, Khurāsān, Kirmān, and Qūhistān.(4) There were more or less fifteen sub-sects.(5) Al-Shahristānī mentions some of them: the ‘Ajāridah,(6) followers of ‘Abd al-Karīm b. ‘Ajrad in Sīstān,(7) the Khalafīyah, followers of Khalaf al-Khārijī in Kirmān and Makrān,(8) and the Shaybānīyah, followers of Ziyād b. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān al-Shaybānī in Jurjān, Nasā, and Armenia.(9)

The Ṣufrīyah also had settlements in Central Asia. According to Ibn Ḥazm, the ‘Ajāridah, who were considered a sub-sect of the Ṣufrīyah, were mainly in Khurāsān in the second half of the 2nd/8th century.(10) The Ḥamziyah were followers of Ḥamzah b. ‘Abd Allāh al-Khārijī, who mounted a rebellion in Sīstān and Khurāsān in 179/795, in an attempt to establish a Ṣufrī state.(11)

---

(1) Al-Ash’arī, Maqālāt, 13.
(2) Ibn Khaldūn mentions that when the Najdiyah were in schism, ‘Aṭiyyah tried to seize Oman without success and then moved on to Kirmān. Later, al-Muhallab fought and killed ‘Aṭiyyah in Qandābīl; see Ibn Khaldūn, Tārīkh, 3: 314. However, Ibn al-Athīr mentions that “there is another opinion: that the Khawārij might have killed him”; Ibn al-Athīr, al-Kāmil, 3: 353. ‘Aṭiyyah also minted coins in Kirmān called al-‘Aṭawīyah; see Miles, G., “Some New Light on the History of Kirmān”, 85-98.
(3) Al-Maqrīzī, Khiṭṭat, 2: 354.
(4) Al-Shahristānī, al-Mīlāl wa-al-nīhāl, 1: 193. Al-Rāzī adds that most of the Khawārij in Sīstān were Najdīs; al-Rāzī, Ḥtiqādāt firaq al-muslimīn wa-al-kāfirīn, 47.
(5) Al-As‘arī, Maqālāt, 13-19.
(6) Ibn Ḥazm asserts that the ‘Ajāridah are a sub-sect of the Ṣufrīyah; Ibn Ḥazm, Fīṣal, 4: 190.
(8) Shahristānī, al-Mīlāl wa-al-nīḥāl, 1: 203.
(10) Ibn Ḥazm, Fīṣal, 4: 191.
(11) For more details, see Skladanek, “Elements of Chronology of the Khārijite Insurrection”, 81-95. However, some heresiographies reckon that the Ḥamziyah was a sub-sect of the ‘Ajāridah and the ‘Aṭawīyah. See also Scarcia, “Lo scambio di lettere”, 303.
4.4 Other aspects of the relationship between Ibāḍism and the East

We have already discussed the development of the Khawārij’s relationship with the East, starting from the beginning of the fitnah, and we have seen how they came to play an increasingly significant role in the wake of the other doctrines that appeared during the early days of Islam. The crisis, which followed the death of Yazīd b. Muʿāwiyyah, marks the splintering of the Khawārij and the birth of Ibāḍism. Part of the political crisis was due to the Ibāḍīs’ adoption of quʿūd, on account of which the other Khawārij called them qaʿada or waqifa, meaning “stay-at-homes”. The Ibāḍīs are not important in themselves, but they merit attention, as they represent the transitional phase that distinguishes them from the Khawārij. The Ibāḍīs believed that grave sinners should be regarded as ingrates (kuffār al-niʿam), which implies kufr. However, contrary to this opinion the Muʿtazilah regarded grave sinners as neither believers nor unbelievers, but rather as caught in an intermediate position (al-manzilah bayna al-manzilatayn). The Ibāḍīs’ adoption of this new concept led to proposals for the reformation and reorganization of Ibāḍī political thought in Basra. Regarding this issue, Jābir b. Zayd turned to the Umayyad caliph and declared: “A tyrant sultan [who] is a punishment to people. If you are in a powerful position, try to direct him to follow the truth, and if you have fear of him, then keep supplicating to God.” At the beginning of the 2nd/8th century the states of belief were doctrinally classified by Abū Nūḥ Ṣāliḥ b. Nūḥ al-Dahhān according to three categories of believers: 1) those who praise ʿUthmān and do not relinquish irjā’, 2) those who praise ʿAlī and do not renounce Shīʿism, and 3) those who are still on the right path (i.e., the Ibāḍīs). As Wellhausen notes, the Khawārij entered another stage towards the end of the Umayyad period, when the Khārijī movement took on a totally different character. When Umayyad rule began to dissolve, the Khārijī movement joined in the revolution that would topple the dynasty. The small number of troops characteristic of Khārijī armies grew enormously. The transfer of power from the Umayyads to the ‘Abbasids generally affected the activities of the Khawārij. During this

(2) Al-Kindī, A., al-Muṣannaf, 10: 252.
(3) Al-Shammākhī, al-Siyar, 1: 83.
(4) Wellhausen, Politico-Religious Factions, 80.
period, the Ibāḍīs of Basra continued to live in a state of *kitmān*, keeping their beliefs secret.\(^{(1)}\)

The Ibāḍīs’ relations with the regions east of Mesopotamia may be regarded as the second stage of Ibadi history. Here I have focused specifically on the era after the Ibāḍīs split off from the other Khārijī sects, and the relationship during that period between Ibāḍism and the East. The chronicles are silent about the relationship between Ibāḍism and these lands after the 70s/690s, perhaps due to the Khārijīs’ adoption of insurrection in their movement, while the Ibāḍīs called this the period of *kitmān* (quiescence). Therefore, Ibāḍī biographical dictionaries do not record the first generation (*tabaqah*) of Ibāḍī scholars from the lands east of Mesopotamia. However, studies investigating the lists of names in the Ibāḍī biographical dictionaries and works of the second Ibāḍī generation show that the Ibāḍīs were able to attract Persians and other non-Arabs. Therefore, it is not surprising to find that the people who were starting to formulate Ibāḍism were locals from Basra, such as Jaʿfar b. al-Sammāk\(^{(2)}\) (the son of the fisherman; variant Sammān, butter merchant), Abū Nūḥ Ṣāliḥ b. Nūḥ al-Dahhān\(^{(3)}\) (the painter/greaser), who lived in the Ṭāʾyī quarter, and Abū ‘Ubaydah Muslim b. Abī Karīmah, a basket weaver (*qaffāf*) who was a client (*mawlā*) of Tamīm.\(^{(4)}\) Abū ‘Ubaydah succeeded Jābir b. Zayd and became the second leader of Ibāḍism. Abū ‘Ubaydah may have been Persian, because his name was Kūdīn, Kūrzīn, or Kūrīn.\(^{(5)}\) Also among them were Abū Yazīd al-Khwārazmī,\(^{(6)}\) one of the famous Ibāḍī jurists, Ḥabīb b. Sābūr,\(^{(7)}\) and Abū al-Naẓar al-Khurāsānī,\(^{(8)}\) and other notable Khurāsānīs.\(^{(9)}\) Hence it is no wonder that al-Darjīnī wrote a chapter in his

---

\(^{(1)}\) *EI*², s.v. “al-Ibāḍiyya”. There are also two useful articles that discuss the transformation during this period; Laura Veccia Vaglieri has discussed most of the Khārijī activities and rebellions in the ‘Abbasid era in “Le vicende del Harigismo in epoca abbaside”, 31-44; Watt gives details and brief accounts of the transformation policy in “The Significance of Khārijism under the ‘Abbasids”, 381-387.

\(^{(2)}\) Al-Darjīnī, Ṭabaqāt, 2: 232; al-Shammākhī, Siyar, 1: 74.

\(^{(3)}\) Al-Darjīnī, Ṭabaqāt, 2: 210, 240, 254, 276; al-Shammākhī, Siyar, 1: 81.


\(^{(6)}\) Al-Shammākhī, Siyar, 1: 96; al-Darjīnī, Ṭabaqāt, 2: 251.

\(^{(7)}\) Al-Shammākhī, Siyar, 1: 98; al-Darjīnī, Ṭabaqāt, 2: 250.

\(^{(8)}\) Al-Sālimī, *Lumʿah*, 6; al-Sālimī states that he adopted Ibāḍism.

work\(^\text{(1)}\) entitled “The virtues of Persians”, in which he relates a \textit{ḥadīth} in which the Prophet says, “God has a treasure that is neither gold nor silver, but it is in the bellies of the Persians.”\(^\text{(2)}\) He also relates a \textit{ḥadīth} in which the Prophet says, “If the religion [Islam] were to hang down from the Pleiades, the non-Arab people would reach it, and the luckiest of them would be the Persians.”\(^\text{(3)}\) Al-Ashʿarī claims that the Yazīdīs are a sub-sector of the Ibāḍīs, and the followers of Yazīd b. Unaysah went so far as to claim that God would raise up a prophet from among the Persians and would reveal to him a book, and this book would be revealed as a whole and complete. This caused the Ibāḍīs to dissociate themselves from them.\(^\text{(4)}\) The Yazīdīs had previously been considered Ibāḍīs and eventually moved to Tūn,\(^\text{(5)}\) which is part of Fārs.\(^\text{(6)}\)

During the time of the first Ibāḍī generation there was no discussion of free will and predestination (\textit{qadar}). Later this became the main topic of debate among Ibāḍī theologians. A certain Ibāḍī scholar, Ṣuḥār al-ʿAbdī, gave the following advice concerning the Qadarīyah: “Talk with them about [divine] knowledge (\textit{kallimūhum fī al-ʿilm}). If they admit the \textit{qadar}, they contradict [their doctrine]; if they deny it, they fall into disbelief.”\(^\text{(7)}\) As a result, the issue of \textit{qadar} led to a schism among the Ibāḍīs. The Ḥārithīyah held a different view from the rest of the Ibāḍīs concerning the Muʿtazilī position on \textit{qadar}. They claimed that capacity exists before the act, and that there are acts of obedience not directed towards God.\(^\text{(8)}\) This view gradually attracted followers during Abū ῶ Ubaydah’s time, such as Ḥamzah al-Ḵūfī,\(^\text{(9)}\) ‘Aṭīyah, and Ghaylān. Among the followers during al-Rabī’ b. Ḥabīb’s time were Shuʿayb b. al-Maʿrūf, ‘Abd Allāh b. ‘Abd al-ʿAzīz, and Ibn ʿUmayr ʿĪsā.\(^\text{(10)}\)

\(^\text{(1)}\) Al-Darjīnī, Ṭabaqāt, 1: 12; al-Shammākhī, Siyar, 1: 43-53.
\(^\text{(2)}\) Al-Shammākhī, Siyar, 1: 12.
\(^\text{(3)}\) Al-Shammākhī, Siyar, 1: 13.
\(^\text{(4)}\) Al-Ashʿarī, Maqālāt, 20; al-Shahrastānī, al-Milal wa-al-nīhal, 1: 216.
\(^\text{(5)}\) A city in the province of Qhištān. Yāqūt, Muʿjam al-buldān, 2: 62.
\(^\text{(9)}\) Al-Shammākhī, Siyar, 1: 79, 97; al-Darjīnī, Ṭabaqāt, 2: 243. Lewicki argues that Ḥamzah al-Kūfī was the founder of the Ḥārithīyah sect, which emerged after the middle of the 3rd/9th century; \textit{Ej}, s.v. “al-ibāḍīyya”. On the other hand, al-Baghdādī notes that the Ḥārithīyah were the followers of Ḥārith b. Mazyad, who received knowledge from ‘Abd Allāh b. Ibāḍ; al-Baghdādī, al-Faqī al-bayna al-firaq, 84; Van Ess, Theologie und Gesellschaft, 2: 204.
\(^\text{(10)}\) Al-Shammākhī, Siyar, 1: 97, 110.
Additionally, as al-Shammākhī shows, Abrāha b. ‘Aṭīyah and his father called upon the Ibāḍīs of Khurāsān to follow the Qadařī view on predestination. (1) Hārūn b. al-Yamān followed the Shu’aybiyah, who had adopted similar views to the Qadařīyah in Mahbūb b. al-Raḥīl’s time (d. 220/835). Hārūn and Mahbūb led a wider debate among the Ibāḍīs in Arabia. Consequently, the Ibāḍīs of Yemen followed Hārūn b. al-Yamān. (3) Elie Salem notes that the Eastern Church influenced the Khārijī with regard to the doctrine of free will. Moreover, he says that Shabīb b. Yazīd al-Shaybānī al-Najrānī, the founder of the Aṣḥāb al-Suʿāl, came from Najrān, a Christian area prior to Islam. His thesis is that the doctrine of free will in Islam was influenced by Christians in Syria and Iraq. (4) On the other hand, Wilferd Madelung has discovered an important book, *K. al-Najāt* by Aḥmad al-Nāṣir, who was a Zaydī imam. This book was written to refute ‘Abd Allāh b. Yazīd al-Baghdādī’s anti-Qadařī views. The book reveals that there was a debate between the Ibāḍī groups in Iraq and Yemen and the Qadařīyah at the end of the 4th/10th century. Furthermore, *K. al-Najāt* preserves for us the book of ‘Abd Allāh b. Yazīd against the Qadařīyah. (5) Indeed, during the development of the Ibāḍī school in Basra and until the beginning of the 3rd/9th century, *qadar* was the Ibāḍīs’ primary theological concern. Despite this, Watt postulates that theologically the Ibāḍīs had no influence in Iraq. (6) Josef van Ess in turn has observed, possibly correctly, how far the Ibāḍī school in Basra developed in discussing the subject of *qadar*. (7) In the following years this state of affairs led to the schism among the Ibāḍīs, dividing them into rational and traditional groups. The latter eventually took control of the Ibāḍīs. (8)

---

(1) Al-Shammākhī, Siyar, 1: 98. On the other hand, al-Darjīnī claims that this happened in Najrān; Ṭabaqāt, 2: 276.
(8) ‘Abd Allāh b. Yazīd al-Fazārī explains the development of Ibāḍism during that time: “The followers of al-Raḥib (b. Ḥabib) developed further than us because they followed the athār (tradition) and we followed ra’y (opinion)”; al-Darjīnī, Ṭabaqāt, 2: 477.
The Ibāḍī tradition preserves a creed by Abū al-Faḍl ʻĪsā b. Fūrak al-Khārijī, who belonged to the Sīstānī sect of Ḥamzah al-Khārijī and wrote between 215/830 and 218/833 (or 260/874 at the latest). This creed, which was presented with comments by Muḥammad b. Maḥbūb (d. 260/874) and presented again by Abū Saʿīd al-Kudamī in the 4th/10th century, makes it clear that the Khawārij of Sīstān did not identify themselves as Azāriqah, contrary to what some researchers might have expected. However, Muḥammad b. Maḥbūb, commenting on the creed, notes that they agree with the qadar; and he is seized by a paroxysm of rage at this point, indignantly restating the position of the Ibāḍīs on the relationship with their qawm, claiming that Ibn Fūrak misrepresents them, which, as al-Kudamī notes, is not true at all. Crone and Zimmermann suggest that the creed shows that the Sīstānī Khawārij rejected the central Ibāḍī doctrines concerning the status of non-Khārijī ahl al-qiblah; they were sufficiently related in creed – in their view – “to make us feel that the letter’s qawm was as our qawm.” One can see here a theological gap between the time after al-Rabī’ī’s death (170s/786-796) and Maḥbūb’s departure from the Ibāḍī centre in Basra. Similarly, the available records provide only little information regarding a possible correlation between the theological progress in Ibāḍī doctrine and the collapse of the Ibāḍī movement in Basra.

As reflected in the above presentation, one can see that the issue of qadar dominated debates during Maḥbūb’s time. However, there are two possible explanations for the pressure that led to the eclipse of the Ibāḍīs in Basra. Firstly, one could suspect that Maḥbūb was unable to rule the Ibāḍī scholars in Basra and therefore left. This suggests that the Ibāḍī sources ignored the Ibāḍī scholars who settled there later. This seems to be correct, judging from the sīrah sent to Imam al-Šalt, which states that the Ibāḍīs had divided into three groups: the followers of Maḥbūb, the followers of ʻAbd Allāh b. Yazīd, and the followers of Hārūn. Secondly, since the Ibāḍī leaders in Basra submitted their differences to the Omani imam and were indeed losing grasp of the

---

(3) Crone and Zimmermann, Epistle of Sālim ibn Dhakwān, 274.
(4) Crone and Zimmermann, Epistle of Sālim ibn Dhakwān, 274.
(5) Al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt, 1: 204.
leadership, Crone and Zimmermann conjecture that Maḥbūb left Basra for political rather than for theological reasons. That is to say, he did not leave because the Ibāḍī Basran leadership, i.e. Rabīʿ and Maḥbūb, had gone to spend the rest of their lives in Oman, nor because Oman became a spiritual centre of Ibāḍism, but because the Omanis and North African Ibāḍism had developed separate identities.\(^1\) So the majority of Ibāḍīs outside Basra had passed into the hands of local imams capable of backing their decisions with military power, and the Basrans could respond to this development only by emigrating.\(^2\) Of course, without the mediation of Basra communication between the North African and Omani Ibāḍīs became difficult. Ennami notes that the Nukkār in North Africa followed ‘Abd Allāh b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz, Ḥātim b. Manṣūr, and Abū al-Mu’arrīj in fiqh, and ‘Abd Allāh b. Yazīd al-Fazārī in theology.\(^3\) Indeed, this formation between the Ibāḍīs in Mashāriqa and Maghāriba can be considered as the third stage in the Ibāḍī school after fitnat al-takhīm and the schism among the Khawārij.

At the beginning of the 2nd/8th century the Ibāḍīyah were able to define their doctrine, and from this period onward their members began to be known to others as Ibāḍīs.\(^4\) At the same time they began to realize that there was a need to concentrate on their dá wah (missions) and on the activities of their hamalat al-ʿilm ilā al-amsār (missionaries to the settlements).\(^5\) As the historical reports of the Ibāḍī missionaries show, they were sent out from Oman, North Africa, Yemen, Ḥaḍramawt and Khurāsān, and even more is known about them.

It is possible to identify the Ibāḍī scholars from Eastern Mesopotamia from the beginning 2nd/8th century onward through a survey of the Ibāḍī fiqh works. Among the earlier Ibāḍī generation of ḥadīth narrators was Ḥamād b. Isḥāq al-Khwārazmī, who might have been a contemporary of Abū ‘Ubaydah Muslim.\(^6\) The Ibāḍī revolt at the end of the Umayyad period, led by Ṭālib al-Ḥaqq in Arabia, was actively

\(^1\) Crone and Zimmermann, *Epistle of Sālim ibn Dhakwān*, 311-312.
\(^2\) Crone and Zimmermann, *Epistle of Sālim ibn Dhakwān*, 311-312.
\(^3\) Ennami, *Studies in Ibāḍism*, 263.
backed by the Persian Qurʾān reader, grammarian, and poet ʿAbd al-ʿAzīz Bishkast in Medina. Furthermore, al-Sālimī preserves for us the list of Ibāḍī scholars who served as missionaries in Khurāsān and Central Asia: Abū Yazīd al-Khwārazmī, Abū ʿAbd Allāh Hāshim b. ʿAbd Allāh al-Khurāsānī, Naṣr b. Sulaymān, Māhmūd b. Naṣr, and Abū ʿAbd Allāh al-Khurāsānī. Several of the Khurāsānī men had previously supported Imam al-Julandā b. Masʿūd in establishing the first imamate of Oman in 131/748. Among them was Hilāl b. ʿAṭīyah, who became the qāḍī for the imam and died with him in 134/751 while fighting against the ʿAbbasids. According to Madelung, he was the first Ibāḍī missionary in Khurāsān. There is also mention of his brother Shabīb b. ʿAṭīyah, who served as muḥtasib between the death of Imam al-Julandā and the imamate of Muḥammad b. Abī ʿAffān, Abū Manṣūr al-Khurāsānī, and Abū ʿAbd Allāh Hāshim b. ʿAbd Allāh al-Khurāsānī. Among them was also Abū Hāshim Nāfiʿ b. Jarīr al-Khurāsānī, who lived in Basra and transmitted āthār from al-Rabīʿ. He was a scholar of traditional Omani fiqh. According to Abū Ghānim al-Khurāsānī, other Ibāḍī legal scholars teaching in Khurāsān at this time were Ḥātim b. Manṣūr and Abū Saʿīd ʿAbd Allāh b. ʿAbd al-ʿAzīz.

From 161/777 to 297/909 the Rustamid dynasty united all the Ibāḍīs in North Africa around a centre in western Algeria. This family claimed to be descended from pre-Islamic Persian royalty. At the end of the 2nd/8th century Abū ʿĪsā ʿIbrāhīm b. Ismāʿīl al-Khurāsānī sent a letter from the Ibāḍī centre in Basra to Tāhart in North Africa in support of the

---

(10) *EI* 2, s.v. “Rustamids”.
election to the imamate of the Rustamid ʿAbd al-Wahhāb b. ʿAbd al-Raḥmān (171-208/788-824) against the Khalafiyah.\(^1\) The famous Ibāḍī work *K al-Mudawwwanah* by Abū Ghānim Bishr b. Ghānim al-Khurāsānī is a collection of Ibāḍī āthār from Basra in the 3\(^{rd}\)/9\(^{th}\) century.\(^2\)

The Ibāḍī connection with the East continued until the beginning of the third century. A letter from Maḥbūb b. al-Raḥīl in Basra to Naṣr b. Sulaymān in Khurāsān has been preserved.\(^3\) When Maḥbūb left Basra, the connection between the Ibāḍīs of North Africa, the Mashāriqah, and the people of Basra broke off. This may have happened because of the Nukkār of North Africa.\(^4\)

Ibn al-Nadīm provides a list of Ibāḍī scholars and their works in his *Fihrist*, under the section on Khārijī theological and jurisprudential works. This list is useful for tracing the Ibāḍī scholars in Basra and Kufah, most of whom are not mentioned in the Ibāḍī sources.\(^5\) According to this list, Ibāḍism in Basra was still alive in the 5\(^{th}\)/11\(^{th}\) century, however, it must have played a rather marginal role, because there is no sign of any influence on subsequent Ibāḍī works on fiqh or theology. The scholars listed are Ibrāhīm b. Isḥāq, Ṣāliḥ al-Nājī, al-Haytham b. al-Haytham al-Nājī, Abū al-Qāsim al-Ḥadīthī, and Abū Bakr al-Bardaī. The list also shows that they debated with the Muʿtazili and Murjiʿī scholars, such as Abū ʿAli Yaḥyā b. Kāmil b. Ṭalḥah al-Khudārī,\(^6\) who was a Muʿtazili and a follower of Bishr al-Marīsī and wrote about the debate between him and Jaʿfar b. Ḥarb.\(^7\) Other scholars are added by al-Masʿūdī, ʿAbd Allāh b. Yazīd al-Fazārī in Kufah as well as Abū Mālik al-Ḥaḍramī,\(^8\) and al-Asḥārī also names Muḥammad b. Ḥarb.\(^9\)

\(^1\) Al-Shammākhī, Siyar, 1: 144, 162; Ibn Sallām, *Baḏ al-islam*, 135; Madelung, *Religious Trends in Early Islamic Iran*, 74; *EF*, s.v. “Khalafiyah”.


\(^7\) Al-Asḥārī, *Maqālāt*, 329.


As the historical accounts\(^{(1)}\) show, Khārijī rebellions in the East continued to break out from time to time. A number of them were successful for a few years and then disappeared. There were also several revolts in other regions, such as Sīstān, Khurāsān, and Kirmān. According to al-Ṭabarī and Ibn al-Athīr the revolts occurred in the years 178/794, 252/866, 254/868, 255/868-869, 256/869, 263/876, 267/880, 272/885, 273/886, 279/892, 280/893, 281/894, 282/895, and 283/896, though Ibāḍīs are not likely to have been involved. Watt may be right in saying that there is a sharp contrast between the Khārijism of these unsuccessful rebels of the ‘Abbasid period and that of the earliest Khawārij. In short, the Khārijī revolts of the ‘Abbasid period are to be classified as reactionary protests, which did not result in any real improvement, but which gave the participants the subjective sensation that they were achieving something\(^{(2)}\). In this case, it is possible to argue that the scholarly achievements of the Ibāḍī scholars were abandoned during the preceding political period – i.e. in the mid 3\(^{rd}\)/9\(^{th}\) century – and that they subsequently refrained from getting involved in Islamic theological issues. It becomes clear that the Ibāḍīs in Central Asia were still controlled by Basran scholars who represented a link with all the different areas up to the beginning of the 3\(^{rd}\)/9\(^{th}\) century, but that they then lost this control. It is also noteworthy that the Ibāḍīs in Oman and North Africa were involved in the political conflict in connection with the election to the imamate at the end of 3\(^{rd}\)/9\(^{th}\) century. This resulted in fierce theological debates, especially on the issues of qadar, kufr, and īmān. Thus they split into sub-sects, such as the Khalafiyah and the Nukkār in North Africa and the Rustāq and Nizwā schools in Oman. For these reasons the Ibāḍīs began to lose their position in the East to the doctrines of the Murji‘ah and the Shī‘ah.\(^{(3)}\) This might be one of the consequences of the new transformation of Ibāḍīsm, which was not successful in establishing the Ibāḍī imamate in this area and failed to unite the Ibāḍī communities under its auspices.

\(^{(1)}\) See Vaglieri, “Le vicende del Harigismo in epoca abbaside”, 31-44.
\(^{(2)}\) Watt, “Significance of Khārijism”, 387.
\(^{(3)}\) For further information on the spread of Murji‘ī thought in the East, see Madelung, “The Early Murji‘a in Khurāsān and Transoxania and the Spread of Hanafism”, 32-39.
4.5 The Ibāḍī Settlements in the East

Let us now turn to Ibāḍī toponymy in the East. Existing settlements mentioned in classical Arabic geographies account for some of the settlements, but we need to investigate how long these existed. Inevitably, we must address the problems of the geographical literature on Ibāḍī and Khārijī settlements, bearing in mind that the Khawārij were not necessarily Ibāḍī.

We need not consider early settlements in or near the Arabian Peninsula, Iraq, Oman, Yemen, Ḥaḍramawt, Shaḥar, Bahrain, and Suqutrā Island. Ibn al-Mujāwir (7th/13th century) says that there were also Ibāḍīs in Syria, in Damascus and Ḥarrān. In the course of his discussion of the Khārijī doctrine Ibn al-Nadīm (d. 438/1047) provides helpful information regarding their settlements: “This sect existed in different places, some of which are Oman, Sīstān, Azerbaijan, al-Sinn, al-Buwāzīj, Karkh Jidān, Tall ‘Ukbarā, Ḥizzā, and Shahrazūr.” In addition, Lewicki discusses the Ibāḍī groups outside Basra to show how Ibāḍī thought spread during the Islamic conquests. Madelung and van Ess give detailed information on the Ibāḍīs in the East.

4.5.1 Eastern Iran

We do not have a detailed description of the first settlement of the Muḥakkimah in eastern Iran. The sīrah of Sālim b. Dhakwān is thought to have been written in the 70s AH. Van Ess suggests that it was

---

(1) According to Ibn al-Mujāwir (d. 713), they spread throughout most of northern Iraq and the Kurdish mountains, as well as in Baghdad and Basra; Ibn al-Mujāwir, Tārīkh al-mustabṣir, 2: 279.
(2) Ibn Ḥaqqal, Ṣūrat arḍ, 37; al-Idrīsī, Nuzhat al-mushtāq, 1: 164.
(3) Al-Iṣṭakhri, al-Masālik wa-al-mamālik, 25; Ibn Khaldūn, Tārīkh, 4: 484.
(4) Ibn Khaldūn, Tārīkh, 4: 485.
(6) Yaqūt, Muʾjam al-buldān, 3: 227.
(8) A town near Mosul in the province of al-Jazīrah; Le Strange, Lands of the Eastern Caliphate, 90.
(9) Ibn al-Nadīm, Fihrist, 329.
(10) EI², s.v. “al-Ibādiyya”.
(11) Madelung, Religious Trends in Early Islamic Iran, 54-76; Van Ess, Theologie und Gesellschaft, 2: 573-655.
(12) For further information about the sīrah of Sālim b. Dhakwān, see Chapter One.
composed in eastern Iran. According to al-Iṣṭakhrī, Hanẓalah of Tamīm, descendants of 'Urwah b. Udayyah (a leader of the first Muḥakkimah), migrated to eastern Iran. They crossed from Bahrain to Fārs during the Umayyad period and settled in Iṣṭakhr, where they owned property and lived in villages. The Banū ‘Umārah, descendants of al-Julandā b. Karkar, were also migrants of Omani origin. They had a castle that is known as al-Daykdān or Ibn ‘Umārah’s Castle. Al-ʿAwtābī writes of the pre-Islamic migration of the Omani Sulaymah b. Mālik to Kirmān. His descendants were known as the people of Mirbad, Banū Bilāl, and Banū al-Julandā b. Karkar. Al-Julandā was an ancestor of both al-Ṣafāq and the Haram. According to Wilkinson, both the Omani sources and an independent non-Omani source make it clear that all the Azd dynasties in Persia, including the Ṣaffārids, were of Omani origin. The essential point is that early settlements of Omanis were established in eastern Iran before the Arabs took control of it. The question that arises here is whether these settlements of the Omani Azd had an influence in this region and whether they adhered to the Muḥakkimah. Wilkinson maintains that they were a semi-autonomous people. Ibn Khaldūn describes the conflict between the Khawārij and the Ṣaffārids in Sīstān, Hurā, and Khurāsān in 253/866.

In Fārs, the Ḥamzīyah (an Ibāḍī sub-sect) were active at the beginning of the 2nd/8th century. Al-Masʿūdī (d. 346/957) mentions their existence in Iran. Madelung identifies the Khawārij of eastern Iran as Ibāḍīs. Interestingly, Ibn al-Mujāwir (d. 690/1291) writes that Ibāḍīs lived in Hamadhān as well as in Iṣfahān, Dīr Lyān, Dakūk and Ārān. Additionally, the island of Ibn Kawān (present-day Qashm Island, Van Ess, Theologie und Gesellschaft, 1: 172.

(2) Al-Iṣṭakhrī, Masālik wa-al-mamālik, 141. On the other hand, Ibn Ḥazm attributes them to his brother Abū Bilāl; Jamharat, 212. Ibn Durayd emphasizes that Abū Bilāl did not have any progeny; Ibn Durayd, Ishtiqāq, 167.

(3) Al-Iṣṭakhrī, Masālik wa-al-mamālik, 141. J.C. Wilkinson discusses the relationship between these clans; “Suhar in the Early Islamic Period”, 897.

(4) Al-Iṣṭakhrī, Masālik wa-al-mamālik, 116.

(5) Al-ʿAwtābī, Ansāb, 2: 218.


(7) Ibn Khaldūn, Tārīkh, 4: 686.


(9) Madelung, Religious Trends in Early Islamic Iran, 76.

(10) Ibn al-Mujāwir, Tārīkh al-mustabṣir, 279.
situated near the coast of Kirmān, opposite Rās Musandam) was, according to Ibn Khurradādhbih and al-Idrīsī (d. 560/1166), still inhabited by Ibāḍīs in the 6th/12th century.\(^{(1)}\)

Ibn Ḥawqal (d. 367/977) describes the province of Kirmān in the 4th/10th century: "...there are three Friday prayer mosques in the town of Bam, and the Khārijī mosque is in the sūq beside the house of Manṣūr b. Khurdiān, a prince or Qān of Kirmān. The Khawārij keep their treasury in the mosque."\(^{(2)}\) They are described as thrifty yet wealthy people.\(^{(3)}\) Madelung suggests that they were probably engaged in trade.\(^{(4)}\) According to Wilkinson, there were Ibāḍīs in Kirmān until the 5th/11th century.\(^{(5)}\) Madelung considers them to have been Khawārij, since according to the heresiographers they were ‘Ajāridah.\(^{(6)}\) The Khārijī groups (whom the heresiographers simply call al-Ḥarūrīyah) are described thus: "They are in the regions of Sīstān, Herat, and Khurāsān. They are numerous people; only God knows their number."\(^{(7)}\) Crone and Zimmermann argue that the Khawārij on the border between Fārs and Kirmān, who engaged in revolts in the mid-ninth century, may well have been Ibāḍīs.\(^{(8)}\)

### 4.5.2 Southern Iran and Sind

There are two factors that played major roles in the evolution of the settlements. The first factor is Omani maritime power.\(^{(9)}\) In the first quarter of the 1st/7th century ʿUthmān b. Abī al-ʿAṣī al-Thaqāfī received some naval support from Oman and Bahrain for his early campaign against the Persian coast.\(^{(10)}\) There was an early attempt by the caliphal forces to occupy the region of Sind, but the Muslim ships were unsuccessful at sea\(^{(11)}\) until they occupied the region.

---


\(^{(2)}\) On the city of Bam, see Le Strange, *Lands of The Eastern Caliphate*, 312.


\(^{(4)}\) Madelung, *Religious Trends in Early Islamic Iran*, 70.


\(^{(7)}\) Madelung, *Religious Trends in Early Islamic Iran*, 63.

\(^{(8)}\) Crone and Zimmermann, *Epistle of Sālim ibn Dhakwān*, 286-287.


\(^{(10)}\) Al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ al-buldān*, 420.

\(^{(11)}\) Al-Hajjāj b. Yūsuf, the Umayyad governor of Iraq, dispatched his deputy in Oman, Badīl b. Tahfah al-Bajali, to Daybul; al-Balādhurī, *Futūḥ al-buldān*, 422.
However, during the first imamate of Julandā b. Masʿūd (r. 132-134/749-751), the Omanis mustered a sizeable navy, which they sent on an expedition to Suqutrā, and which imposed a šülḥ (treaty) on the Christians of that island. Consequently, tensions surfaced between the imamate and the Christian Suqutrians when the Christians rebelled against Imam al-Ṣalt b. Mālik. The second factor is the formal development of commercial maritime trading with the Indian Subcontinent, which occurred during the imamate of Ghassān b. Ṭāṣim (r. 192-207/808-823), in conjunction with attempts to eliminate the Indian pirates (bawārij al-Hind). However, al-Masʿūdī attributes this suppression of piracy to the ʿAbbasid government during the reign of al-Muṭtaṣim. Through the development of the Omani navy at the beginning of the 3rd/9th century, the imamate employed in the Omani army a force from the people of Daybul, commanded by al-Maṭṭār al-Hindī. The commercial trade with India led to the development of a relationship with non-Muslims. Muḥammad b. Maḥbūb includes Indians in dār al-islām, even though they were disbelievers. The Omani trading ships, until the 7th/13th century, were still connected with the port of Daybul.

This overview highlights the position of Oman in the Indian Ocean as well as the early relationship between the Omanis and the people of southern Iran and Sind after the rise of Islam. Al-Masʿūdī writes about the southern coast of Iran in the 4th/10th century (the province of Makrān) as the place of shurāt. Lewicki suggests that the Khawārij living in the coastal region between Kirmān and Sind might have been Ibāḍīs. Al-Ḥimyarī gives a clear picture of the Ibāḍī locations along the coast of Makrān and Sind: al-Tīz, Kīz, Dazak, Rāsak, Rustāq al-Khurūj, and Rustāq Khurdhān, and all the inhabitants of these Rustāqs adhered

---

1. Al-Balādhuri, Futūḥ al-buldān, 421; EF, s.v. “Daybul”.
6. EF, s.v. “Daybul”.
10. Al-Maṣʿūdī, Murūj al-dhahab, 1: 239.
11. EF, s.v. “al-Ibāḍiyya”.
to *shurāt*. These settlements expanded southward. The *sūrah* of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd to the people of Maṇṣūrah, the capital of Sind in the 5th/11th century, documents that Ibāḍism still existed in this region. According to Ibn al-Mujāwir, the Ibāḍīs were still settled in regions as far as Jawādir. In addition, Yāqūt recounts that Quzdār (or Quṣdār), a town in Sind not far from Bust, was populated by Khawārij, specifically the Khalafīyah. Al-Shahrastānī notes that most of the Khawārij of Kirmān and Makrān were Khalafīyah. However, we need not accept the view that the Khawārij in these regions were Khalafīyah, even if Khalaf had appeared in this area around 179/795. Al-Baghdādī recounts that the Khalafīyah had conflicts with another Khārijī group, followers of Ḥāmzah b. Adarak. Apparently, Khalaf was succeeded by Masʿūd b. Qays, who was attacked by Ḥāmzah in a river valley and drowned in the river in the course of the fight. The Khalafīyah doubted Masʿūd’s death and then considered themselves to be in a time of *taqīyah*. Thereafter, there is no further mention of the Khalafīyah, so they may have ceased to exist at the beginning of the 3rd/9th century.

4.5.3 Khurāsān and Sīstān

In the first centuries of Islam Sīstān was a refuge to the Khawārij, who launched their uprisings and incursions into the neighbouring Khurāsānī towns. It seems that the Khawārij movement was linked with Sīstān from its beginning before the battle of Nahrawān. Al-Balādhurī states that the first Khawārij missionary to Sīstān was a man from Tamīm, named either ‘Āṣim or Ibn ‘Āṣim. Barthold suggests that there was a whole series of Khawārij disturbances in Sīstān and Bādhaghīs. As described, many Khawārij lived in this region in the 4th/10th century and proudly established their sect. According to

---

(1) Al-Iṣṭakhri, al-ʿAskari wa al-mamālik, 177.
(2) EI, s.v. “al-Ibādiyya”.
(3) Ibn al-Mujāwir, Tārīkh al-mustabsīr, 2: 279.
(4) Yāqūt, Muʿjam al-buldān, 4: 341.
(6) Al-Baghdādī, al-Farq bayna al-firaq, 78.
(7) Madelung, Religious Trends in Early Islamic Iran, 66.
(8) Barthold, An Historical Geography of Iran, 70. See also Tārīkh-i Sīstān, 7.
(10) Al-Balādhurī, Futuḥ al-buldān, 387.
(11) Barthold, Turkestan down to the Mongol Invasion, 198.
geographical literature, Karkawya was a big town in this province, inhabited by Khawārij until the 7th/14th century. There were scholars and fuqahāʾ, described as uncompromising in prayer, fasting, and worship.⁹ Not far from Karkawya, and three leagues from Zaranj, was a town named Kurūnak, or Karūn. Yāqūt adds that it was a pleasant place, full of good things, with a population of Khawārij and weavers.⁹

With regard to the popular movements of the 3rd/9th and 4th/10th centuries, Barthold shows that chief among them were the Khawārij in Sīstān and the Shiʿah in Ṭabaristān, both of whom continued under the Sāmānids.⁸ According to Ibn al-Mujāwir, Sīstān was still considered Ibāḍī until the 7th/13th century.⁴ Crone and Zimmermann suggest that eastern Iran was home to Sīstānī Khawārij, whose extremist dissociation from the Ibāḍīs had repercussions even in Oman.⁵ This might have been the case for a certain period of time concerning the people adherent to the Ibāḍī doctrine, because al-Shahrastānī adds that the Khawārij of Sīstān were ʿAjāridah who followed ʿAṭīyah’s doctrine.⁶

From the beginning of the 2nd/8th century, there was an Ibāḍī group of considerable size in Khurāsān, as a result of the activity of the ḥamalat al-ʿilm.⁷ Moreover, a number of Ibāḍī scholars were natives of this province. Since the Muhallabids during the Umayyad period were governors of Khurāsān, the Omani Azd joined them in Khurāsān and consequently adopted it as their base.⁸ Contrary to Crone’s and Zimmermann’s view that there is no evidence that Ibāḍism had even reached Khurāsān by the 720s/1320s, it was engendered among the pupils and theologians. There is no substantive evidence for the conjecture that many Azd who accompanied Yazīd b. al-Muhallab to Khurāsān were Ibāḍī.⁹ Conversely, al-Shaqqī claims that Ṣuḥār al-ʿAbdī came from Khurāsān,¹⁰ and Ibn Maddād and al-Saʿdī describe him as

---

(1) Yāqūt, Muʾjam al-buldān, 3: 190.
(2) Le Strange, Lands of the Eastern Caliphate, 342; Yāqūt, Muʾjam al-buldān, 4: 458.
(3) Barthold, Turkestan down to the Mongol Invasion, 213.
(4) Ibn al-Mujāwir, Tārīkh al-mustabṣir, 279.
(5) Crone and Zimmermann, Epistle of Sālim ibn Dhakwān, 286.
(7) EI, s.v. “Ibāḍiyya”.
(8) Ibn Khaldūn, Tārīkh, 4: 414, 415.
(9) Crone and Zimmermann, Epistle of Sālim ibn Dhakwān, 286-287.
Khurāsānī. It is possible that he was an Arab who had participated in the conquest of eastern Iran and had been a governor of Herat for a while. Ibn Jaʿfar (3rd/9th century), on the other hand, states that there was an Ibāḍī insurgent in Khurāsān at the beginning of the 2nd/8th century, at the time of Abū ʿUbaydah. As we can see, the region of Khurāsān sheltered the Ibāḍīs until the 7th/13th century. Van Ess notes that the fact that we incidentally hear about the Ibāḍīs in Hirāt points to the end rather than the beginning of the 2nd/8th century. Munir b. Nayyir, in his sīrah to Imam Ghassān b. ʿAbd Allāh, writes that the Ibāḍī groups in Yemen and Khurāsān were the most important among the eastern Ibāḍī settlers. Al-Maqrīzī recounts that Ḥamzah al-Khārijī rebelled in Khurāsān and then established bases in Kirmān, despite the Ibāḍīs’ dissociation from Ḥamzah. The geographical literature refers to the town of Karūkh as Ibāḍī. It was about ten leagues from Hirāt. Al-Iṣṭakhrī states that it was a pleasant place. It had a Friday prayer mosque in the Subaydān area for the people of shurāt. According to al-Iṣṭakhrī, the buildings of the town were made of sun-dried bricks and were built on the foot of the mountains. Other shurāt towns were Astribān, Mārābād, Bāshān, Kūrān, Bā Asfrāz, Kāshkān, and Asfizār.

Finally, let us turn to the other part of Khurāsān, the Khūjistān province in the Hirāt Mountains, where Aḥmad b. ʿAbd Allāh al-Khūjistānī lived. He rebelled in Nīsābūr, and died in 264/877. Al-Iṣṭakhrī reports that there were followers of Aḥmad b. ʿAbd Allāh in the province of Bādhaghīs, in the village of Fān, and that all of them were shurāt. But there is little evidence that Aḥmad was an Ibāḍī, which also supports my view. Madelung argues that no information is available about his precise whereabouts, ethnic identity, or later fate after the 3rd/9th century. However, the sīrah to the people of Khurāsān proves

---

1. Al-Saʿdī, Qāmūs, 3: 312-315; Ibn Maddād, Sīrah, 5.
2. Crone and Zimmermann, Epistle of Sālim ibn Dhakwān, 287, fn. 110.
11. Madelung, Religious Trends in Early Islamic Iran, 74.
the existence of Ibāḍism in Khurāsān in the 4th/10th century. According to the sīrah, the Ibāḍīs received their knowledge from Naṣr b. Sulaymān, who died at the end of the 3rd/9th century, which implies that his pupils were still active in the 4th/10th century. The commercial routes may have improved the relationship between Oman and Central Asia. Ibn al-Mujāwir describes these routes: Sohar was the starting point for caravans to Kirmān, thence to Sīstān, and finally to Khurāsān, which was the main centre for the caravans to Central Asia.\(^1\)

4.5.4 Al-Jazīrah, Azerbaijan, and Khwārazm

The Khawārij of the northern regions came from Mosul and northern Mesopotamia, at different points in time. Al-Balādhurī recounts that there were three kinds of residents in Mosul: Khawārij, merchants, and burglars.\(^2\) The Azd were already residing among the Arab tribes of Shaybān and Bakr,\(^3\) and a substantial population of Azdīs from Oman lived alongside an Ibāḍī community, while most of the local Khawārij must have been Ṣufrīyah.\(^4\) Those who rebelled in the early ‘Abbasid period were not Ibāḍī but Ṣufrīyah.\(^5\) Van Ess notes that the Ibāḍīs who joined Abū Ḥamzah al-Shārī’s (d. 130/748) force in the Arabian revolt with Azd Zahrān were not from Mosul but from Basra; Abū Ḥamzah moved to Mosul after the revolt had been suppressed.\(^6\) However, the original Ibāḍīs of these settlements belonged to the Omani community, as indicated by records about Māzin b. Ghaḍūbah, who was the first Omani to embrace Islam. He had two grandsons, Aḥmad b. Ḥarb and ‘Alī b. Ḥarb b. Muḥammad b. ‘Alī b. Ḥayyān. The latter was born in Azerbaijan in 175/791 and was a scholar of ḥadīth. He died in Mosul in 256/878. The other grandson, Aḥmad, was born in 174/790 and was also a scholar of ḥadīth, and he died in Aḍana in 263/876.\(^7\) It seems that some Ibāḍī scholars tried to contact Ḥamzah al-Kūfī, who was excommunicated by Abū ‘Ubaydah on account of his views on qadar.

\(^{(1)}\) Ibn al-Mujāwir, Tārīkh al-mustabṣir, 2: 284.
\(^{(2)}\) Al-Balādhurī, Ansāb al-ashrāf, 3: 281.
\(^{(3)}\) Madelung, Religious Trends in Early Islamic Iran, 70.
\(^{(5)}\) For the exact year mentioned in the text, see Ibn al-Athīr, al-Kāmil; al-Ṭabarī, The History of al-Ṭabarī.
Ḥamzah then moved to Mosul, where he tried to convert some Ibāḍīs. In the 4th/10th century there was an Ibāḍī scholar from Mosul, Abū Bakr Yahyā b. Ishāq al-Mawsilī, who might have had some contact with several Omani scholars. Al-Shaqṣī states that he lived in Oman, in Izki. Ibn Maddād identifies Abū 'Abd Allāh Hāshim b. 'Abd Allāh both as Khurāsānī and Khwārazmī. It seems that the scholars subsequently disappeared from this region, including even the pupils of the Ibāḍī scholar Abū Yazīd al-Khwārazmī.

According to al-Maš′ūdī, Ibn al-Shādhulīyah rebelled with the support of Kurds. From the end of the Umayyad period, Mosul and al-Jazīrah were generally centres of the Ṣufrīyah. Hence we cannot judge whether those shurāt were Ibāḍī; the historical records do not differentiate between the Khawārij and thus provide little evidence. Ibn Khaldūn notes that some of the Kurds of Azerbaijan, Syria, and Mosul were Christians and Khawārij who still preserved dissociation from 'Uthmān and 'Alī. Bukhārā also seems to have been under Khārijite control in the 5th/11th century, as it was seized by Ḥusayn b. Muḥammad al-Khārijī, whom Barthold, on account of his surname, views as a Khārijī leader and possibly a Jacobite. According to Ibn Khaldūn, in the 7th/13th century, the Khwārazm Shāh eradicated the Khawārij from Khwārazm. On the other hand, Ibn al-Mujāwir notes that in the 7th/13th century Ibāḍīs existed in Azerbaijan.

To sum up, as Madelung argues, the Ibāḍī community was always oriented towards centres outside Iran. By way of the available information it is possible to prove the existence of the Ibāḍī community in the regions east of Mesopotamia during the medieval centuries.

---

(1) Al-Shaqṣī, Manhaj al-tālibīn, 1: 601.
(2) Ibn Maddād, Sīrah, 6.
(3) The leader of the Ṣufrīyah, al-Ḍahḥāk b. Qays al-Shaybānī, rebelled against Marwān II, and found support in Azerbaijan. Then they continued to thrive in the ʿAbbasid period, as we have seen in the previous section. Ibn Khaldūn, Tārīkh, 6: 63.
(5) Barthold, Turkestan down to the Mongol Invasion, 222.
(7) Ibn al-Mujāwir, Tārīkh al-mustabsir, 278.
(8) Madelung, Religious Trends in Early Islamic Iran, 75.
CHAPTER FIVE

REREADING THE SIYAR
ON OMAN’S SOCIO-POLITICAL HISTORY

5.1 The Socio-Political Situation in Oman during the Period of the Siyar

We now come to a third aspect of our study, the historical, social, and political background.\(^1\) The siyar were written during the interregnum in the imamate of Oman, which lasted approximately one and a half centuries, from the beginning of the 4\(^{th}/10\)\(^{th}\) century, when the Khwārazmī \textit{sirah} was written, to the middle of the 5\(^{th}/11\)\(^{th}\) century, when Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd al-Yaḥmadī wrote.

The collapse of the first imamate in Oman in 280/892 happened because the Omanis brought about the downfall of their own state, through the intransigence of their ‘ulamāʾ and the unleashing of tribal ‘aṣabīyah. All of this was encouraged by the ‘Abbasids and Omanis themselves. In the aftermath of the disastrous events, Oman’s maritime commerce was destroyed.

During the first forty years of interregnum Oman began to disintegrate into its constituent parts, while attitudes and alliances developed. This period also witnessed the emergence of the Omani dynasties and their rise to prominence supported by the rule of foreign authorities. According to Ibn Khaldūn, there was Banū Sāmah b. Lūʾī b. Ghālib’s state, which was under ‘Abbasid suzerainty while they dominated the imamate state in 280/893. Although the Banū Sāmah regarded themselves as members of the Quraysh clan, Quraysh genealogists deny this claim.\(^2\) The first ruler was Muḥammad b. al-


\(^2\) Ibn Khaldūn, \textit{Tārikh}, 4: 198; Ibn al-Mujāwir, \textit{Tārikh al-mustabsīr}, 281. The coins were minted in Oman by a number of apparently unconnected individuals. Aḥmad b. al-Khalīl (ca. 300/912) and ’Abd al-Ḥātim b. Ibrāhīm (ca. 316/928) are named on coins, but we do not yet have evidence as to whether they were Banū Sāmah successors or not. Was Aḥmad b. Hilāl,
Qāsim al-Sāmī, who sought the assistance of the ʿAbbasid governor al-Muʿtaḍid. Banū Sāmah’s rule did not extend over the whole of Oman, but was limited to the coastal region. Al-Sālimī describes this forty-year period of interregnum in Oman as an occupation on the part of a tyrannical ruler.\(^{(1)}\) Later, Oman was defeated in 305/917 by the Carmathian leader Abū Ṭāhir al-Janābī.

The rulers who followed were Carmathians (317-375/929-985). Their invasion caused devastation; however, they granted the population a considerable degree of internal autonomy.\(^{(2)}\) According to Ibn Khaldūn, they came back as invaders in several campaigns on different occasions. Rather than allowing the ʿAbbasids to collect the tribute, the Carmathians collected the tribute for themselves. These developments had doctrinal repercussions, because the Friday sermon now expressed the Carmathian leanings toward the Shi'i Fatimids rather than the Sunni ʿAbbasids.\(^{(3)}\) Their primary concern was to exact a tribute from the Omanis. They appointed an agent at Nizwā.\(^{(4)}\) At about this time, Yūsuf b. Wajīh’s dynasty was born. Ibn Wajīh succeeded in wresting control in Oman and minted coins in his own name.\(^{(5)}\) Ibn al-Athīr describes him as Amir of Oman.\(^{(6)}\) He was appointed by the ʿAbbasids, although his relationship with Baghdad became turbulent.\(^{(7)}\)

---

\(^{(1)}\) Al-Sālimī, ‘A., Tuhfāh, 1: 269. A coin has been found that was minted in Oman in 289/902 by Ṣaffārids, who were the rulers of Kirmān and southern Iran. The coin is in the name of Muḥammad b. Hārūn. The Saffarids perhaps fled to Oman in the Sāmī era. Williamson, Sohar and Omani Seafaring, 22.

\(^{(2)}\) Miles, S., Country and Tribes, 98.

\(^{(3)}\) Ibn Khaldūn, Tārīkh, 4: 198.

\(^{(4)}\) Miles, S., Country and Tribes, 96, 101.


\(^{(6)}\) Ibn al-Athīr, al-Kāmil, 6: 292.

\(^{(7)}\) Ibn Miskawayh records that the ʿAbbasid minister Abū ʿAli b. Muqla ordered Yūsuf b. Wajih to deal with Abū al-ʿAbbās al-Khuṣībī, the former minister of the ʿAbbasids, and Abū Sulaymān Yahyā, specifically, to exile and imprison them in Oman. Yūsuf ignored his instructions. Ibn Miskawayh, Tajārīh al-umam, 1: 323.
Nevertheless, Ibn Wajīh tried to intervene in the caliph’s affairs in Baghdad by leading two unsuccessful campaigns to seize Basra. The first campaign took place in 331/942, and the second in 341/952, when he entered into an alliance with the Carmathians against the Buyids. We have no information regarding the ethnicity or the genealogy of Ibn Wajīh, and neither local nor universal histories state the precise date of his conquest. Miles holds that the Turkish Seljuk army supported him. It seems that he was appointed by Baghdad and continued as Amir of Oman until he was murdered by his slave Nāfiʿ in 342/953. Miles points out that the Omanis preferred the Carmathian suzerainty to the yoke of the ‘Abbasids, because they not only began to recover from their former political predominance, but enjoyed a temporary respite from the business of war and were thus able to turn to the arts and other peacetime pursuits, and to look forward to a fresh tide of prosperity. The rule of the Persian Buyids in Oman witnessed the emergence of the Mukramids (ca. 390-443/1000-1040). Bosworth argues that they were presumably a local Omani family, appointed as governors in coastal Oman by the Persian Buyids with their capital at Sohar. The reign of the Mukramids shows clearly that Oman was divided into coastal and internal regions. The former was under Mukramid authority and the latter was controlled by the imamates. As regards cultural influence, Omani dynasties that were backed by the Buyids had several links with Persia. For example, the poet Miḥyār al-Daylamī praised the Mukramid amir, and the poet Abzūn al-ʿUmānī, of Persian origin, fled to Oman to join a Buyid campaign. Ibn Khaldūn records that the king of the dynasty of Julandānīs in 428/1035 was Zakarīyāʾ b. ‘Abd al-Malik from the Azd clan in Qalhāt. Their rule acknowledged allegiance to Ibāḍism.

Despite foreign rule, Ibāḍī ideology helped to create Omani unity and is a characteristic feature of this period. The Ibāḍīs were in a state of interregnum and were losing control of the country due to the chaotic

---

(2) Miles, S., Country and Tribes, 102. There is no mention of him as either an Omani or a member of the Banū Sāmah; see Vine and Casey-Vine, Oman in History, 173.
(3) Miles, S., Country and Tribes, 98.
(5) See Al-Daylamī, Diwān, 35, 170, 241, 320.
(7) Ibn Khaldūn, Tārīkh, 4: 199.
conditions of rule and the schism between the Nizwā and Rustāq schools. Yet Ibāḍīsm persisted in Oman. The period under consideration here was particularly important for the crystallization of the Omani state.\(^1\) The ‘ulamāʾ used several strategies to protect Ibāḍī authority in Oman.

Firstly, the political structure of the imamate changed from *zuhūr* (manifestation) to *dīšā* (defence), which permitted the Omanis to form a unified ideology to protect themselves against foreign forces. The ‘ulamāʾ were never silent, electing several imams over the forty years of the imamate’s interregnum. The *sīrah* of Abū Qaḥṭān chronicles their names and reveals that these imams followed each other in rapid succession, but all failed to establish their authority.\(^2\) The appointment of Imam Abū al-Qāsim Saʿīd b. ‘Abd Allāh in 320/930 essentially revived the imamate. The new imam managed to take control of Oman from Ibn Wajīh and repossess many cities in the interior,\(^3\) thereby confining Ibn Wajīh’s influence to the coastal districts. Then Imam Abū al-Qāsim Saʿīd b. ‘Abd Allāh was succeeded by Imam Rāshid b. al-Walīd (r. 328-342/939-953), until the imamate was restored by al-Khalīl b. Shādhān and Rāshid b. Saʿīd. According to Wilkinson, this time was marked by a great resurgence of Ibāḍī activities associated with the revival of the Omani imamate, following the eviction of the Buyids in the middle of the 5th/11th century and the attempts of the ‘ulamāʾ to keep their ideology afloat in the following period of accelerated disintegration.\(^4\)

Secondly, the attempt to restore the imamate helped to instigate several revolts against foreign rulers. These revolts arose frequently. In the year 331/942 there was a revolt led by Imam Rāshid b. al-Walīd and his leader Abū Muḥammad ‘Abd Allāh b. Abī al-Muʿthir, and later, in 342/953, the imam lost his authority.\(^5\) Ibn al-Athīr reports that in

---

\(^1\) See Peterson, “Oman’s Odyssey: From Imamate to Sultanate”, 2.


\(^3\) We do not know exactly how far his rule extended, but he seems to have taken control over most of the interior of Oman, because he died in Manāqī village, near Rustāq, and his capital was Nizwā; *Tuḥfah*, 1: 275. Sirḥān, “Annals of Oman,” 25; Ibn Ruzayq, *History of the Imams and Seyyids of Oman*, 29; al-Masʿūdī, *Marāj al-dhahab*, 1: 234.


363/972 there was a revolt in Oman led by Imam Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid, and another revolt in 442/1050 under the leadership of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd (Ibn Rāshid). These revolts helped to preserve Ibāḍī ideology, and the Omanis became united under one imam. In the meantime, Oman formed a distinctive political and geographical unit, which was by no means isolated. The role of the ‘ulamāʾ is illustrated by Abū al-Muʿthir al-Ṣalt b. Khamīs, who gave orders to burn the houses of people who had supported the Carmathians in Oman, under the pretext that “they will be unable to return or settle there again.” Omani compilations during this period consider non-Ibāḍī rulers as tyrants and unjust sultans. The concept of the tyrannical sultan is connected here with a ruler considered to be a non-Omani colonist. Local rulers during foreign occupation were regarded as supporters, hirelings, or governors of invading states. Thus the compilations do not include them in the chronology of Omani rulers.

Thirdly, maritime trading increased significantly, despite the numerous invasions by ‘Abbasid, Carmathian, and Seljuk forces. When Baghdad became the commercial metropolis of the Middle East in the early ‘Abbasid period, the ports of al-Ubullah and Sīrāf, and to a lesser extent the ports of Oman, became entrepôts of trade with the East. While the Omani coast was still controlled by foreign rulers, most of the shipping activities took place on the East African coast. Al-Idrīsī notes that boats came from the East Indies to the Sofala coast. The East African people themselves seemed to always employ Omani vessels. Wilkinson suggests that, depending on the regime in power, the Omanis more or less benefited from this trade, which also included on a considerable scale black slave dealing down the East African coast.

---

(3) Al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt, 1: 360.
(4) The concept of tyrannical sultans, as used in the compilations, siyar, and historical accounts during this time, can be seen very clearly in al-Faḍl b. al-Ḥawārī, Jāmīʿ, 1: 45.
(9) Wilkinson, Imamate Tradition, 43.
By the time the Omanis were able to reestablish their imamate and expand overseas in the 5th-6th/11th-12th centuries, the strategic geographic position achieved great importance, whereas up to the 5th/11th century the Gulf hinterland had been the most important position. The Fatimids in Egypt immediately developed new maritime routes and began a full-scale development of the western empire. These routes were established between Egypt and the Atlantic Ocean in an attempt to avoid Byzantine-controlled waters in the Mediterranean. As a result, there was growing commercial activity with Nubia and Red Sea trade in the hands of Abyssinian merchants. They served as intermediaries for the eastern Roman Empire, as they attempted to conquer Yemen and Hijaz and tried to dominate commerce with India. Wilkinson suggests that even though the reunited Omanis may have had some impact on raids in non-Muslim India, and were actively proselytizing in both the Indus valley area and Kilwa, their influence in East Africa was temporary. These connections enabled an expansion of commercial activity along the Red Sea-Southwest Arabian axis, so that the hegemony of the Persian Gulf in the Indian Ocean trade began to be challenged. The rising importance of the Omani coast as an intermediary trading area, namely in Sohar, Qalhāt, Muscat, and Raysūt, together with the decline of Basra and the collapse of Sirāf in the Gulf, resulted in greater power for the merchants of southwestern Arabia and the Gulf. On the other hand, the Chinese had developed shipbuilding and navigation techniques during Sung times, as a consequence of which large junks were able to sail not only into the Gulf, but also into the Red Sea ports. These junks also crossed the Indian Ocean directly from Sumatra to East Africa. Another factor affecting the general picture of Oman, in Wilkinson’s view, is that India became a major centre of trade after the establishment of the Delhi Sultanate in India after 588/1192.

(1) It is possible to see the expanded role of Oman in the Indian Ocean at various periods, e.g. al-Julandā b. Masʿūd (132-134/749-751), Ghasil b. ‘Abd Allāh (192-208/807-823); see Wilkinson, “Suhar in the Early Islamic Period”; Wilkinson, *Imamate Tradition*, 42.


This historical overview shows that the move of Maḥbūb b. al-Raḥīl from Basra to Oman made Oman the centre of Ibāḍism, and Oman began to attract considerable attention. However, at the end of the 3rd/9th century both of the Ibāḍī imamates in North Africa and Oman came to an end. The first imamate represented the unification of Oman, more or less closely associated with the Ḥaḍramī Ibāḍī state, while the second imamate was restored by Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd, who reinvigorated the ideology of the imamate to inaugurate a new ruling era. He expanded his authority to al-Aḥsāʾ and Hagar in the western part of the Gulf to bring the rebel clans of Nahd and ʿAqīl under his control. He also turned both toward Ḥaḍramawt, to support the Ibāḍī leader Abū Isḥāq, and eastward, to reestablish his rule over arḍ al-Hind in Manṣūrah. Wilkinson thinks that what primarily distinguishes the second imamate in the 5th/11th century from the first imamate in the 3rd/9th century is that by the time of the second imamate Ibāḍī doctrine had fully matured.

5.2 Chronology of Imams in Oman

Ibn al-Athīr mentions the events of 363/974, when Oman revolted against the Buyids shortly after Muʿizz al-Dawlah's death, and when the Omanis elected an imam named Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid and a leader called Ward b. Ziyād. Imam Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid's war with al-Muṭahhar b. ʿAbd Allāh is mentioned in the sīrah of Abū al-Ḥasan al-Bisyāwī. Al-Muṭahhar b. ʿAbd Allāh was the leader of a Buyid military campaign to Oman. According to the sīrah, however, Imam Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid was appointed to the imamate twice, and Abū al-Ḥasan is doubtful of the first imamate of Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid. Al-Sālimi, however, denies Ibn al-Athīr’s account for two reasons: 1) Imam Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid (455-472/1062-1088) was the son of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd (425-455/1033-1062); 2) Imam Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid is not mentioned in the Omani sources of this time. Now, this issue leads us to re-examine the chronology of the Omani imams. At first sight, when we compare Ibn al-Athīr’s and Ibn Miskawayh’s accounts with the sīrah of

(1) Wilkinson, Origins, 70.
(2) Al-Sālimi, ‘A., Tuḥfah, 1: 304; Ibn Khaldūn notes that Nahd’s clan settled in Hagar (Bahrain); Ibn Khaldūn, Tārīkh, 4: 198.
(5) Al-Ṣiyar wa-al-jawābāt, 2: 5.
Abū al-Ḥasan al-Bisyāwī, it appears that we should accept the accounts of Ibn al-Athīr and Ibn Miskawayh rather than al-Sālimi’s suggestion. When we try to reconcile these statements, we see that al-Bisyāwī lived between the middle of the 4th/10th century and the beginning of the 5th/11th century, so it is impossible that he lived during the reign of Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid. In his *ṣirah* al-Bisyāwī reports that he lived during the imamate of Rāshid b. al-Walīd (328-342/949-953) and that his teacher (*shaykh*) Ibn Barakah had imposed a payment on him in connection with an endowment.\(^1\)

Furthermore, in 2002 during the restoration work on the Bahla Castle, a jar wrapped in clothes was discovered in the front side of the castle’s mosque. The jar contained silver coins that were minted in Oman, others in Persia and Iraq. What is even more interesting, there are silver coins minted by Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd and al-Khalīl b. Shādhān.\(^2\)

Most of the Omani historical compilations and the Omani *siyar* of this period lack clarity, and we have some difficulty in accepting their chronology of imams. Of course, the confusion seems to have arisen because Omanis remembered Ḥafṣ as the son of an imam called Rāshid, without knowing who this Rāshid was.\(^3\) The author of *Kashf al-ghummah* mentions that Ḥafṣ was the son of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd,\(^4\) and possibly the Omani historians followed him in this chronology.

The Omani historian al-Baṭṭāshī (d. 1999) has another hypothesis regarding the chronology of Omani imams during this period, based on the *ṣirah* to Imam al-Khalīl b. Shādhān, calling upon him to follow in the footsteps of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd.\(^5\) Upon examining the historical events in the imamate,\(^6\) he makes some suggestions that can help us to revise the chronology.

Firstly, al-Baṭṭāshī holds that Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid was the brother of the grandfather of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd and denies that Ḥafṣ was the son of Rāshid b. Saʿīd. His version of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd’s genealogy is: Rāshid b. Saʿīd b. ʿAbd Allāh b. Rāshid b. Saʿīd b. Muḥammad al-Yaḥmādī. So, according to this account, ʿAbd Allāh, who was the grandfather of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd, was actually the brother of Imam Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid.

---

\(^1\) Al-Siyar wa-al-jawābāt, 2: 5.

\(^2\) Al-Salimi, “Coins of the Omani imams during the Buyid Period”, 181-188.

\(^3\) Crone and Zimmermann, *Epistle of Sālim ibn Dhakwān*, 336.


Secondly, in examining the sīrah of Abū al-Ḥasan al-Bisyāwī, he shows that Imam Ḥafṣ was elected twice to the imamate. Al-Bisyāwī’s sīrah explains that the first election of Imam Ḥafṣ could have been repeated, or that only the second one can be considered as valid. Ibn al-Athīr notes, as we saw above, that the revolt was in 363/974, when the Buyids forced him to take refuge in Yemen.\(^{(1)}\)

Thirdly, al-Baṭṭāshī suggests that the imamate of al-Khalīl b. Shādhān (407-425/1016-1033) came into being later than that of Rāshid b. Saʿīd, while the first imam was Ḥafṣ b. Rāshīd – the de facto imam from 353/964 until the Buyids defeated him in 363/974. The second imam was Rāshīd b. Saʿīd, who died in 445/1053. The last imam was al-Khalīl b. Shādhān, from 447/1055 until 474/1081. He argues that the earlier historians in Oman may have made a copying error by confusing 407/1016 with 447/1055. This argument seems convincing and can be used as the basis for relating these imams to the Ibāḍī leader in Ḥaḍramawt, Abū Isḥāq al-Ḥaḍramī, and to the wars in which he was involved with the Sulayhids, who were supported by the Fatimids.\(^{(2)}\)

Al-Ḥāmid, on the other hand, denies Abū Isḥāq’s relevance,\(^{(3)}\) because the Sulayhid state existed during the years 439-532/1047-1138, and it is uncertain whether al-Khalīl’s reign is correctly dated between 407 and 425/1016 and 1033. Nevertheless, in his poetry Abū Isḥāq sought help from both Imam Rāshid and Imam al-Khalīl. It is impossible to accept his poetry as evidence, since it is a request for help from Imam al-Khalīl against the Sulayhids before their state was actually founded in Ḥaḍramawt. Likewise, Bāwazīr argues that al-Sālimī might have made an error regarding the date of al-Khalīl’s death.\(^{(4)}\)

Abū Isḥāq al-Ḥaḍramī seems to have been a deputy under the Omani authority before he gained independence in Shawwāl 454/1062. Further evidence comes from another recently published Ibāḍī juridical work from Ḥaḍramawt — *K. al-Dalā’il wa-al-ḥujaj* by Abū Isḥāq Ibrāhīm b. ‘Abd Allāh

---

al-Ḥaḍramī (d. c. 475/1082). He was the nephew of Abū Ḥaṣāq al-Ḥaḍramī (see above), who lived during the reign of Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd al-Yahmadī. According to this work Abū Ḥaṣāq Ibrāhīm b. Ḍabd Allāh visited Oman in 452/1060 at the time of Imam al-Khalīl b. Shādhān. The fact that these two Abū Ḥaṣāqs shared the same name could account for the confusion in Omani sources over which one was alive during the reign of which imam, i.e. Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd and Imam al-Khalīl b. Shādhān. Later sources may have seen both Abū Ḥaṣāqs as being one and the same person.

Alternatively, Wilkinson reports that Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid succeeded his father (Rāshid b. Saʿīd) in 445/1053 without election, and that the Ḥaḍramī imam broke away and recognized the first two imams in the one ṭaḥṣil. Thus there appears to be a strong correlation between al-Baṭṭāshī’s hypothesis and the relevance of Abū Ḥaṣāq, as can be gathered from the Sulayhid appeal to the Fatimids that took place in Yemen in 453/1061. This led to some kind of confrontation between Omanis and Fatimids over control of the southern Arabian Peninsula. This confrontation demonstrates the extent of Ḥaḍramī influence in Ḥaḍramawt and Yemen, and it also emphasises the role of the Sulayhids in eliminating the existence of Ibāḍism in Yemen and Ḥaḍramawt.

We can now postulate the following chronology:
1- Imam Rāshid b. al-Walīd (328-342)
2- Imam Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid (353-363)
3- Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd (425-445)
4- Imam al-Khalīl b. Shādhān (447-474)
5- Imam Rāshid b. ‘Alī (475-513)

The previous chronology was:
1- Imam Rāshid b. al-Walīd (328-342)
2- Imam al-Khalīl b. Shādhān (407-425)
3- Imam Rāshid b. Saʿīd (425-445)
4- Imam Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid (445-475?)
5- Imam Rāshid b. ‘Alī (475-513)

This revised chronology could signify a tremendous transformation in the understanding of this period, as it highlights a new vision of Omani history and emphasizes the importance of foreign literary sources to supplement Omani literature.

---

(1) Abū Ḥaṣāq Ibrāhīm b. Ḍabd Allāh al-Ḥaḍramī, al-Dalāʾil wa-al-hujaj, 298.
SUMMARY AND CONCLUSION

To conclude this study, it seems appropriate to recapitulate the main points of the preceding chapters in order to summarize the results. The two avenues of investigation concerned:

(1) the relation between internal and external aspects of Omani historical sources relevant to our subject, i.e. between Ibāḍism as thought and the interaction of Ibāḍism with Omani policies; and

(2) the relation between the individual and common aspects of the siyar in question.

The examination of these aspects has revealed a remarkable unity of understanding. Although Ibāḍī thought changed as it developed, we have been able to identify the common features in Ibāḍī and Omani history.

First and foremost, the Omani siyar manuscripts are in need of restoration. Their poor condition has hitherto gone unnoticed, because few researchers have consulted them and no one has conducted a thorough investigation. Moreover, the manuscripts are still scattered and fragmented. From the time of the emergence of siyar in Oman, scholars showed a great interest in writing siyar as a primary reference for religious matters. This interest is believed to have influenced their style and content, which gradually shifted from religious to historical. They had originally been considered as a religious reference, but subsequently they began to record relevant historical facts. The siyar were associated with political movements in Oman. This immense intellectual influence on the siyar finds expression in their coverage of religion or politics or a combination of both. This influence eventually resulted in a new literary form concerned with political issues during the Omani political transitions. Such political participation and intellectual influence can be traced back to the Arabic literature of the Jāhilī, Umayyad and ‘Abbasid periods.
In this study we examined the texts with the aim of analysing the above-mentioned elements. It is not necessary to define the siyar themes by a few narrow aspects, but they can be grouped according to these elements. Indeed, the use of these elements as a basis for our investigation could be called into question by some researchers concerned with further aspects.

This study attempts to demonstrate a wide range of perspectives for a full-fledged study of siyar. If traditional text authentication methods are excluded (although such methods contribute to the understanding of some historical facts), attention can be drawn to two characteristic narrative techniques employed in each sirah (which could be employed in any text in classical Arabic): 1) exegetical, in which narrative extracts are embedded; and 2) parabolic, in which the narration itself is the framework for frequent, if not continuous, allusion to scripture. The relation between these two types cannot be seen as one of simple inversion. In the exegetical style, scriptural extracts, however discrete and truncated, exhibit the canonical text; in the parabolic style, scriptural allusions are only implicit, exhibiting diction and imagery but not the verbatim text.

The texts examined in this study have been treated as collective, rather than as individual documents. Once the siyar had been edited and translated, we concentrated on three key aspects: authenticity, common elements of the siyar, and finally the progression of the Ibāḍī movement in Asia. The discussion of Ibāḍī tradition in Asia has been limited to historical evidence, without involving neither other disciplines, such as literature, nor any specialized studies on the Ibāḍī doctrine. Throughout this study of siyarwe have tried to relate all the information supplied to the development of the Ibāḍī doctrine in Asia and the historical relations between Oman and Asia. There is a general agreement throughout these texts in terms of time and location. The chronological events from the 2nd/8th to the 5th/11th century show that siyar liberally quoted passages extracted from previous Ibāḍite documents. On the other hand, the Ibāḍī texts were widely spread throughout Ibāḍī protectorates. All this information, however, is still open and debatable.

These are the main arguments dealt with in the course of the investigation; but there are still matters that require further consideration. In our chronological study of siyar we have omitted
reference to certain aspects in the evolution of the Ibáḍī doctrine and the connection between Oman's history and the siyar. This study ultimately aims at understanding the siyar through adopting modern methodologies of analysing historical documents and at providing qualitative rather than quantitative data.

The hypotheses proposed in this study are not necessarily unique, but an attempt has been made to re-investigate them, with their validity being thoroughly examined. Firstly, using Wilkinson's findings we have traced the factors that shaped Omani history and have tried to determine to which degree these factors – the imamate, maritime trading and tribalism – affected the shaping of this era (from the 10th to the 11th century). Secondly, we have revised the chronology of Omani imams during this era. Thirdly, the study has dealt with the Ibáḍī settlements in Asia which in fact were affected chiefly by three factors:

1. the internal crisis in Oman and frequent campaigns after the end of the first imamate in 280/892;
2. the changing routes of maritime trading from the 4th/10th to the 5th/11th century; and
3. the capture of the eastern Islamic empire by Mongol forces and the collapse of trading in Central Asia.

Principally, all these factors affected Oman's political attitude and were significant in encouraging Omani adherence to Ibáḍī doctrine. Similarly, the Ibáḍī attitude reflects the Omani political agenda. Nevertheless, the Omanis never demonstrated that they harboured any intent of expansion or that they had any desire of propagating their beliefs. Subsequently, Islam experienced a great transformation, though the collapse was similar to the collapse of rationalism in Islamic thought in general. The significance of this transformation within Ibáḍism is indicated in literary aspects of the siyar texts which are sometimes difficult to differentiate on the level of content and structure. The need for correspondence/transmission forced Omani writers to develop a style of expressing themselves, which has made their texts more comprehensible regarding of the basics of culture and religion in Oman.

The siyar are products of ʿulamāʾ who were not isolated, but rather prospered through contact with the outside world. The siyar spread Omani influence through trade caravans and maritime routes. Consequently, the Omanis came to rule the Ibáḍīs in the East and
familiarized them with the Mashāriqah school. At the same time, the Omanis began to react to foreign occupation by identifying their sense of unity with Ibaḍism, and it was from then on that they began to call themselves Ibaḍīs and formalize their sect and theology. In spite of the disasters that accompanied this period, the Omanis were fortunate to live in an era in which both jurisprudence and Ibaḍī theology flourished, with many illustrious scholars, such as Ibn Ja'far (d. around 270), Ibn Barakah (d. around 360), al-Kudamī (d. around 355), and al-Bisyāwī (d. around 370). The 'ulamāʾ initiated a new period of evolution and formulation of legislative policy for the imamate.

How was the political setting of Oman related to Ibaḍism in the East? As yet, we lack convincing evidence to answer this question. There are several possibilities to affirm a relationship. The second imamate lasted less than a century, before the country was occupied by the Daylams and Seljuks. Particularly in the centuries after the second imamate had collapsed, the Hurmuzi kingdom emerged, and its ruler attempted to control the Gulf trade. This attempt resulted in the destruction of most of the eastern coast of Oman. Furthermore, it weakened communication between the Ibaḍī parties in the East, and we may assume that the Omani 'ulamāʾ emigrated from the coast to the interior to establish a new base. As a result, the 'Abbasid state became feeble, and the meaning of setting up an Islamic state changed. A greater impulse developed to divide the world into dār al-ḥarb (the land of unbelievers) and dār al-salām (the land of the Muslims). Each new state tried to establish its own doctrinal identity.

The Nabhānī state in Oman, although they were Ibaḍīs, changed the political system from election of imams to hereditary succession. Consequently, the 'ulamāʾ did not accept them, and this resulted in a conflict between the Nabhānīs and the 'ulamāʾ for approximately five centuries. Hence this period has been considered to be a dark age. However, it was important for the Ibaḍīs, as it gave them time to organize a state and develop their ideology and doctrine. Moreover, it was an era of radical changes to Islamic rule, since adopted doctrines began to be imposed on Islamic rulers, for example the Shi‘ī doctrine of the Safavids in Iran, the Sunnī doctrine in Central Asia, and the Zaydī doctrine of the Mutawakkilīs in Yemen. After this doctrinal impact, maritime trading from the Gulf to the Red Sea flourished anew. The
Nabhānīs and Omanis started trading from the Indian coasts to East Africa at the beginning of the 6th/12th century. This suggests that Ibāḍism in the East, for the most part, was affected by the collapse of the Omani imamate. Yet the rulers of the Gulf and the Omani coast prevented communication between Omani ‘ulamāʾ and the Ibāḍīs in the East, so that the ‘ulamāʾ turned towards the East African coast and initiated a new era of Ibāḍī missionaries.

This brings us to the end of Ibāḍism in Central Asia. There is important evidence in Ibn al-Mujāwir’s accounts that in the 7th/13th century the Ibāḍīs in Central Asia adopted Shāfiʿism, whereas the Kilwan (East Africa) people abandoned Shāfiʿism and adopted the Ibāḍī doctrine. This shift of Islamic doctrines seems to reflect a pattern of assimilation and adoption of doctrine when there is contact, but abandonment and shifting to other doctrines when contact is lost.
BIBLIOGRAPHY

Sources

Manuscripts

Siyar Manuscripts:
- The copy of the Ministry of National Heritage and Culture in Muscat.
- The copy of the Sālimī Library in Bidiyah.
- The copy of the manuscript collection of Aḥmad b. Nāṣir al-Sayfī in Nizwā.

Printed Sources
Bibliography

———, *Ansāb al-ashrāf*, vol. 4/1, Ihsān 'Abbās (ed.) (Bibliotheca Islamica vol. 28), Franz Steiner Verlag, Wiesbaden 1979.


al-Baṭṭāshī, Sayf b. Ḥammūd, *Iḥtāf al-aʿyān fī tārīkh baʿḍ ʿulamāʾ ‘Umān*, Muscat 1992. (Without publisher, but printing was sponsored by Maktabat al-Sayyid Muḥammad b. Ṭāhīd, Muscat.)


Bibliography


(The printing was sponsored by Sulaymān and Aḥmad al-Sālimī.)


al-Sālimī, Muḥammad b. ‘Abd Allāh, Nahḍat al-a’yān bi-ḥurrīyat ahl ‘Umān, Cairo, n.d.


———, Muʿjam al-udabāʾ, Cairo, Maktabat ʿĪsā al-Bābī al-Ḥalabī, 1936-1938.

Modern studies
Brockelmann, Carl, Geschichte der Arabischen Litteratur, Zweite den Supplementbänden angepasste Auflage, Brill, Leiden 1937-1942.
Brünnow, Rudolf Ernst, The Kharijites under the First Omayyads, S. Khuda Bukkan (transl.), The Muslim Review, Calcutta 1927.
Bibliography


al-Salimi, Abdulrahman, *The Omani Siyar as a Literary Genre and its Role in the Political Evolution and Doctrinal Development of
Eastern Ibāḍism with Special Reference to the People of Khwārizm, Khurāsān and Maṇṣūrah, PhD thesis, Durham University, Durham 2001.


INDICES

Indices of the English text
For references of Qur’ānic verses and ḥadīths, see Arabic indices (pp. 207-215).

Persons

The index is ordered alphabetically according to first names, except for names of modern authors who figure under their surnames.

‘Abd al-ʿAzīz Bishkast: 155
‘Abd Allāh b. ‘Abd al-ʿAzīz, see Abū Saʿīd: 155
‘Abd Allāh b. ʿAbd al-ʿAzīz: 83, 85, 155, 168, 173-175
‘Abd Allāh b. Yazīd al-Fazārī: 152 (note 8), 154, 156
‘Abd Allāh Muḥammad b. ʿĪsā al-Sarri: 43
‘Abd al-Malik b. ʿAmīr b. Marwān: 44
‘Abd al-Raḥmān b. Rustum: 30
‘Abd al-Wahhāb b. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān: 156
Abrāha b. ʿAṭiyah: 152
Abū ‘Abd Allāh Ḥāshim b. ‘Abd Allāh al-Khurāsānī: 155, 166
Abū ‘Abd Allāh Muḥammad b. ʿĪsā al-Khurāsānī: 14, 29
Abū al-Faḍl ʿĪsā b. Fūrak al-Khārijī: 153
Abū al-Ḥasan al-Bisyāwī: 89, 173-175
Abū ‘Alī Yaḥyā b. Kāmil b. Ṭalḥah al-Khudārī: 156
Abū al-Muʿarrīj: 154
Abū al-Muʿthir al-Ṣalt b. Khamīs: 171
Abū al-Qāsim Saʿīd b. ‘Abd Allāh: 170
Abū Ayyūb Wāʾil b. Ayyūb al-Ḥaḍramī: 13, 41-44
Abū Bakr al-Bardaʿī: 156
Abū Bakr Yaḥyā b. ʿĪsā al-Mawṣili: 45
Abū Ghānīm Bishr b. Ghānim al-Khurāsānī: 155, 156
Abū Ḥafṣ al-Khurāsānī: 155
Abū Ḥamzah al-Shārī: 91, 165
Abū ʿĪsā ʿĪbrāhīm b. ʿĪsā al-Khurāsānī: 155
Abū Isḥāq Ibrāhīm b. Qays al-Ḥaḍramī: 85, 86, 145-146
Abū al-Ḥaḍramī: 85, 86, 145-146 (note 7), 173, 175, 176
Abū Mālik al-Ḥaḍramī: 156
Abū Manṣūr al-Khurāsānī: 155
Abū Maryam al-Saʿdī al-Tamīmī: 143
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page(s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Abū Mawdūd Ḥājib</td>
<td>45, 88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Muḥammad ‘Abd Allāh b. Abī al-Muʿthir</td>
<td>170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Muḥammad ‘Abd Allāh b. Barakah</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Nūḥ Ṣāliḥ b. Nūḥ al-Dahhān</td>
<td>149, 150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Qaḥṭān Khālid b. Qaḥṭān</td>
<td>89, 140 (note 4), 170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Saʿīd ‘Abd Allāh b. ‘Abd al-‘Azīz</td>
<td>151, 154, 155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Saʿīd al-Kudamī</td>
<td>153, 180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Sākin ʿĀmir al-Shammākhī</td>
<td>43, 45, 152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Ṭāhir al-Janābī</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ‘Ubaydah Muslim b. Abī Karīmah</td>
<td>29, 40 (note 2), 150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū Yazīd al-Khwārazmī</td>
<td>29, 30, 31, 37, 40 (note 1), 150, 155, 166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abzūn al-ʿUānī</td>
<td>169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū ʿUba dah Musli b. Abī Karīmah</td>
<td>29, 40 (note 2), 150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aḥmad al-Nāṣir</td>
<td>152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aḥmad b. ‘Abd Allāh al-Khūjistānī</td>
<td>164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aḥmad b. Ḥarb</td>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aḥmad b. Nāṣir al-Sayfī</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ʿĀʾishah</td>
<td>38, 39, 44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ṭalib</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ḥarb</td>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘Amr b. al-ʿĀṣ: 67, 68</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ʿĀṣim or Ibn ʿĀṣim: 162</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ʿAṭiyāb b. al-Aswād: 145, 148</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ʿAzzān b. ʿAṣqar: 68</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Balādhu ī: 142, 162, 165</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Bāqillānī: 31</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barghash b. Saʿīd b. Sulṭān al-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Būsaʿādī: 14</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barthold, Vasily: 162, 163, 166</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

al-Baṭṭāshī, Sayf b. Ḥammūd: 174-176
Bāwazīr, Saʿīd ʿAwaḍ: 175
Bosworth, C. Edmund: 169
Cook, Michael: 6, 10, 156 (note 5)
Crone, Patricia: 6, 10, 153, 154, 160, 163, 175 (note 4)
al-Darjīnī: 150
Ennami, Amer: 154
Ess, Josef van: 6, 10, 152, 158, 164, 165
Ghassān b. ‘Abd Allāh: 91, 161, 164
Haylān: 151
Ḥābīb b. Sābūr: 150
Ḥafṣ b. Rāshid: 171, 173-176
Ḥamād b. Ishāq al-Khwārazmī: 154
al-Ḥāmid, Sāliḥ: 175
Ḥamnah bt. Jaḥsh: 39
Ḥamzah al-Kūfī: 151, 165
Ḥamzah b. ‘Abd Allāh al-Khārijī: 148, 153, 169
Ḥamzah b. Adarāk: 162
Hārūn b. al-Yamān: 30, 44, 89, 152
al-Ḥasan b. Abī al-Ḥasan al-บาشري: 45, 120
Ḥāshim b. Ghaylān: 43
Ḥāshim Nāfiʿ b. Jarīr al-Khurāsānī: 155
Ḥassān b. Thābit al-Anṣārī: 39
Ḥātim b. Maḥṣūr: 154, 155
Ḥusayn b. Muḥammad al-Khārijī: 166
Ibn al-Athīr: 85, 86, 142, 157, 168, 170, 173-175
Ibn al-Mujāwir: 158, 159, 162, 163, 165, 166, 181
INDICES

Ibn al-Shādhulīyah: 166
Ibn Ḥawqāl: 88, 160
Ibn Ḥazm: 31, 147, 148
Ibn Jaʿfar: 41, 164, 180
Ibn Khaldūn: 147, 148, 159, 166-169
Ibn Khurrahādhbiḥ: 160
Ibn Maddād: 163, 166
Ibn Miskawayh: 173, 174
Ibn Qudāmah al-Ḥanbalī: 43
Ibn ʿUmarʿĪsā: 121
Ibn al-Shādhulī: 166
Ibn awqāl: 88, 160
Ibn azm: 31, 147, 148
Ibn Jaʿfar: 41, 164, 180
Ibn Khaldūn: 142, 148, 129, 166-169
Ibn Khurradādhbih: 160
Ibn Maddād: 163, 166
Ibn Khurradādhbih: 160
Ibn Miskawayh: 173, 174
Ibn Qudāmah al-Ḥanbalī: 43
Ibn ʿUmarʿĪsā: 121
Ibn al-Shādhulī: 166
Ibn awqāl: 88, 160
Ibn azm: 31, 147, 148
Ibn Jaʿfar: 41, 164, 180
Ibn Khaldūn: 142, 148, 129, 166-169
Ibn Khurradādhbih: 160
Ibn Miskawayh: 173, 174
Ibn Qudāmah al-Ḥanbalī: 43
Ibn ʿUmarʿĪsā: 121
Ibn Wajīh, see Yūsuf b. Wajīh
Ibrāhīm b. Isḥāq: 126
al-Idrīsī: 160, 121
al-Ĭṣṭakhrī: 82, 129, 161, 164
Jābir b. Za ḍ: 66, 170, 149, 150
Jaʿfar Abū ʿAbd al-Raḥān: 79, 30, 32
Jaʿfar b. al-Saʿāk: 120
Jaʿfar b. al-Saʿāk: 120
Jaʿfar b. al-Saʿāk: 120
al-Julandā b. Karkar: 159
al-Julandā b. Masʿūd: 66, 84, 155, 161, 172 (note 1)
Khalaf al-Khārijī: 148, 162
Khalaf b. Zayd: 66, 120, 149, 150
Jaʿfar b. Abū Abd al-Raḥmān: 29, 30, 37
Jaʿfar b. al-Sammāk: 150
Jaʿfar b. Ḥarb: 156
al-Julandā b. Karkar: 159
al-Julandā b. Masʿūd: 66, 84, 155, 161, 172 (note 1)
Khalaf al-Khārijī: 148, 162
Khalaf b. Ziyād al-Baḥrānī: 43
al-Khalīl b. Shāḥdān: 84, 85, 170, 174-176
al-Kharāssīnī: 43
Lewicki, Tadeusz: 83, 158, 161
Madelung, Wilferd: 6, 10, 152, 155, 158-160, 164, 166
Maḥbūb b. al-Raḥīl: 44, 66, 152, 156, 173
Maḥmūd b. Mālik: 91
Muḥammad al-Maṭṭār al-Hindī: 85, 173, 175 (note 4)
Māzin b. Ḥanbalī: 30
Muʿizz al-Dawlah: 173
Munīr b. Nayyir: 91, 164
al-Muḥabb: 45
al-Muʿtaḍid: 168
al-Muṭahhar b. ʿAbd Allāh: 85, 173, 175 (note 4)
al-Muʿtaṣim: 161
Naṣr b. Sulaymān: 155, 156, 165
al-Rabīʿ b. Ḥabīb: 31, 66, 129 (note 3), 151, 152 (note 8)
Rāshid b. ʿAli: 176
Rāshid b. al-Walīd: 170, 174, 176
al-Saʿdī, Jumayyil b. Khamīs: 163
Salem, Elie: 152
Ṣāliḥ al-Nājī: 156
Ṣālim b. Dhakwān: 10, 45, 158
Miḥyār al-Daylamī: 169
Miles, Samuel B.: 169
Moses: 31, 38, 122, 127
Muʿāwiyah b. Abī Suṭyān: 67
Muḥammad (P.B.U.H): 38, 66, 68, 81, 85, 91, 118, 119, 128 (note 3), 137
Muḥammad b. ʿAbd Allāh al-Sālimī: 83
Muḥammad b. Abī ʿAffān: 84, 155
Muḥammad b. Abī Ghassān: 91
Muḥammad b. al-Qāsim al-Sāmī: 167-168
Muḥammad b. Ḥarb: 156
Muḥammad b. Maḥbūb: 66, 89, 153, 161
Muḥammad b. Mālik: 91
Muḥammad b. Sulayyim al-Ghāribī: 14
Muḥammad Ibrāhīm al-Kindī: 14, 29
al-Muḥammad b. Jayfar: 30
Muʿizz al-Dawlah: 173
Munīr b. Nayyir: 91, 164
al-Muṣʿabī: 45
al-Muṭāṣim: 161
Naṣr b. Sulaymān: 155, 156, 165
al-Rabīʿ b. Ḥabīb: 31, 66, 129 (note 3), 151, 152 (note 8)
Râshid b. ʿAli: 176
Râshid b. al-Walīd: 170, 174, 176
al-Saʿdī, Jumayyil b. Khamīs: 163
Salem, Elie: 152
Ṣāliḥ al-Nājī: 156
Ṣālim b. Dhakwān: 10, 45, 158
al-Ṣalt b. Mālik: 84, 88, 141 (note 3), 145-146 (note 7), 153, 161
Sayf b. Sulṭān al-Yaʿrubī: 13
Shabīb b. ʿAṭīyah: 45, 155
Shabīb b. Yazīd al-Shaybānī al-Najrānī: 152
al-Shahrastānī: 140, 148, 162, 163
al-Shaqqī: 163, 166
Shuʿayb b. al-Maʿrūf: 151
Ṣuḥār al-ʿAbdī: 151, 163
Sulaymah b. Mālik: 159
Ṭālib al-Ḥaqq: 154
ʿUthmān b. Abī al-ʿAṣī al-Thaqafi: 160
Wāʾil b. Ayyūb al-Ḥaḍramī, see Abū Ayyūb Wāʾil b. Ayyūb al-Ḥaḍramī
Ward b. Ziyād: 173
Wāṣil b. ʿAṭāʾ: 45
Watt, W. Montgomery: 152, 157
Yāqūt: 87, 147, 162, 163
Yazīd b. al-Muhallab: 163
Yazīd b. Unaysah: 151
Yūsuf b. Wajih: 168-170
Zakariyyāʾ b. ʿAbd al-Malik: 169
Zimmermann, Fritz: 6, 10, 153, 154, 160, 163
### Places, regions, countries

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Place</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Aḍana</td>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Aḥsā’:</td>
<td>86, 173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Algeria</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arabian Peninsula</td>
<td>86, 158, 176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ārān</td>
<td>159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ard al-Hind</td>
<td>83, 173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asfizār</td>
<td>164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asia</td>
<td>9-11, 83, 139, 140, 148, 155, 157, 165, 178-181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Astrībān</td>
<td>164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Azerbaijan</td>
<td>143, 158, 165, 166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bā Asfraz</td>
<td>164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bādghaghīs</td>
<td>162, 164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baghdad</td>
<td>168, 169, 171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bahlā Castle</td>
<td>174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bahrain</td>
<td>158-160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bam</td>
<td>160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bāshān</td>
<td>164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Basra</td>
<td>12, 29, 30, 44, 45, 144-144, 146, 149-158, 165, 169, 172, 173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bidiyah</td>
<td>12, 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Buhlā</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bukhārā</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bust</td>
<td>162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Central Asia</td>
<td>9, 10, 139, 140, 148, 155, 157, 165, 177-181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>China</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dakūk</td>
<td>159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Damascus</td>
<td>69 (note 5), 158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daybul</td>
<td>87, 160 (note 11), 161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Daykdān Castle</td>
<td>(also Ibn ‘Umārah’s Castle): 159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dazak</td>
<td>161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Delhi Sultanate</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dīr Lyān</td>
<td>159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>East Africa</td>
<td>10, 171, 172, 1801</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fān</td>
<td>164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fārs</td>
<td>142, 144, 147, 151, 159, 160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ḥaḍramawt</td>
<td>86, 154, 158, 173, 175, 176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ḥaḍramī Ibāḍī state</td>
<td>173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hagar</td>
<td>173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hamadhān</td>
<td>159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ḥarrān</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herat</td>
<td>160, 164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ḥizzā</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hurmuzi kingdom</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrā:</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indian Ocean</td>
<td>83, 161, 172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indus valley</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iran</td>
<td>11, 139, 140, 158-160, 163, 164, 166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iraq</td>
<td>42, 68, 88, 141, 144, 145, 152, 158, 174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iṣfahān</td>
<td>159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Izki</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jawādir</td>
<td>162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-Jazīrah</td>
<td>140, 158 (note 8), 165, 166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Karkawya</td>
<td>163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Karkh Jidān</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Karūkh</td>
<td>154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Karūn (also Kurūnak)</td>
<td>163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kāshkān</td>
<td>164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Khurāsān</td>
<td>42, 65, 148, 150, 152, 154-157, 159, 160, 162, 164-166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kilwa</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kīrmān</td>
<td>140, 148, 157, 159-162, 164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kīz</td>
<td>161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kurūnak (also Karūn)</td>
<td>163</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Indices

**Makrān:** 148, 161, 162  
**Manṣūrah:** 9, 11, 14, 83, 86-89, 162, 173  
**Mārābādh:** 164  
**Medina:** 69 (note 5), 155  
**Mediterranean Sea:** 172  
**Mesopotamia:** 140, 141, 144, 145, 147, 150, 154, 165, 166  
**Mirbad:** 159  
**Mosul:** 165, 166  
**Muscat:** 14, 15, 84, 172  
**Nahrawān:** 139-143, 162  
**Nisābūr:** 164  
**Nizwā:** 13, 14, 84, 85, 157, 168, 170  
**North Africa:** 10, 42, 89, 154-157, 173  
**Nubia:** 172  
**Oman:** 9-11, 41, 83-86, 139, 140, 154-181  
**Omani coast:** 86, 171, 172, 181  
**Persia:** 143, 159, 169  
**Persian Gulf:** 172  
**Qalhāt:** 169, 172  
**Quṣdār,** see Quzdār  
**Quzdār:** 162  
**Rās Musandam:** 160  
**Rāsak:** 161  

**Raysūt:** 172  
**Red Sea:** 172, 180  
**Rustāq al-Khurūj:** 161  
**Rustāq Khurdhān:** 161  
**Rustāq:** 84, 157, 161, 170  
**Sawnī:** 84  
**Shahā:** 158  
**Shahrazūr:** 143, 158  
**Sind:** 14, 83, 86, 87, 89, 160-162  
**al-Sinn:** 158  
**Sīrāf:** 171, 172  
**Sīstān:** 140, 143, 148, 153, 157-165  
**Sohar:** 69 (note 5), 85 (note 8), 88, 165, 169, 172  
**Sumatra:** 172  
**Suqutrā Island:** 158, 161  
**Ṭabaristān:** 163  
**Tall Mawzān:** 140  
**Tall ‘Ukbarā:** 158  
**al-Tīz:** 161  
**Tūn:** 151  
**al-Ubullah:** 171  
**Yemen:** 140, 152, 154, 158, 164, 172, 175, 176  
**Zanzibar:** 14  
**Zaranj:** 163
**Peoples, dynasties, tribes, ethnic, religious and other groups**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbasids: 9, 87, 149, 155, 167-169</th>
<th>Mongol: 179</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Abyssinian merchants: 172</td>
<td>Muḥakkimah: 139-142, 145, 158, 159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘Āqīl: 86, 113 (note 5), 173</td>
<td>Mūrji’ah: 157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aṣḥāb al-Su’āl: 152</td>
<td>Mutawakkilīs: 180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ashʿarīyah: 31, 90</td>
<td>Mu’ṭazila: 44, 45, 149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Azāriqah: 30, 146, 147, 153</td>
<td>Nabhānī: 180, 181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Azd: 84, 139, 159, 163, 165, 169</td>
<td>Nukkār: 154, 156, 157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bakr: 39, 135, 156, 165, 166</td>
<td>Persians: 84, 87, 150, 151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū al-Julandā b. Karkar: 159</td>
<td>Qadariyah: 151, 152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Bilāl: 159</td>
<td>Qaḥṭān: 84, 89, 170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Kharūs: 84</td>
<td>Quraysh: 145, 147, 167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Muṣṭaliq: 44</td>
<td>Roman Empire: 172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū Sāmah b. Lūṭī b. Ghālib: 167</td>
<td>Rustamid dynasty: 155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banū ʿUmārah: 159</td>
<td>Ṣa♯āq: 159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bidʿiyah: 30, 147</td>
<td>Safavids: 180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bishr al-Marīsī: 156</td>
<td>Ṣaffārids: 159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Buyids: 9, 86, 169, 170, 173, 175</td>
<td>Sāmānids: 163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Byzantine: 172</td>
<td>Seljuk: 169, 171, 180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carmathians: 9, 147, 148, 168, 169, 171</td>
<td>Shāfiʿism: 181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chinese: 172</td>
<td>Shaybān: 165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christian: 77, 78, 90, 118, 121, 152, 161, 166</td>
<td>Shīʿa, Shīʿī: 144, 168, 180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daylams: 180</td>
<td>Shuʿaybiyah: 152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fatimids: 168, 172, 175, 176</td>
<td><em>ṣhurāt</em>, sg. <em>shārī</em>: 85, 161, 162, 164, 166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ḥamziyah: 148, 159</td>
<td>Ṣufrīyah: 148, 165, 166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hanẓalalah of Tamīm: 159</td>
<td>Sulayhids: 86, 175, 176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ḥārithiyah: 151</td>
<td>Ṣung: 172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ḥarūriyah: 160</td>
<td>Sunnah: 70, 74, 78, 90, 127, 128, 131, 132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Julandānīs: 169</td>
<td>Ūmayyads: 86, 149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Karrāmiyyah: 31</td>
<td>Yaḥmad: 9, 83, 84, 167, 174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Khalafiyah: 148, 156, 157, 162</td>
<td>Yazidis: 151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Khawārījī: 44, 140-149, 152-154, 157-166</td>
<td>Zaydis: 152, 180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Khwārazm Shāh: 166</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mashāriqah: 156, 180</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Terms

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>ahl al-iqrār:</em></td>
<td>91, 120-124</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>ahl al-qiblah:</em></td>
<td>91, 127, 153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>amšār mumāṣṣara:</em></td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>āthār, sg. athar:</em></td>
<td>31, 74,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>basmalah:</em></td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>fāsiq:</em></td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>fiqh:</em></td>
<td>30, 154-156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>ḥamalat al-‘ilm ili al-amšār:</em></td>
<td>154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>ibāḍism:</em></td>
<td>9, 29, 31, 43, 44, 83, 90, 139-142, 149, 150, 154, 156, 157, 162, 163, 165, 169, 170, 173, 176-181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>‘iddah:</em></td>
<td>72, 130</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>īmān:</em></td>
<td>44, 157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>jahilī:</em></td>
<td>91, 177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>kitmān:</em></td>
<td>150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>kufr:</em></td>
<td>44, 45, 149, 157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>kufr al-ni‘mah:</em></td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>nasab al-islām:</em></td>
<td>13, 41-44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>qadar:</em></td>
<td>151-153, 157, 165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>qiblah:</em></td>
<td>127, 128, 153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>shārī, pl. shurāt:</em></td>
<td>85, 161, 162, 164, 166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>sīrah, pl. siyar:</em></td>
<td>9-15, passim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>taqīyah:</em></td>
<td>162</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
الكشّافات

- كشّاف الآيات القرآنية
- كشّاف الأخедيث والآثار
- كشّاف القواعد الفقهية
- كشّاف الأشعار
- كشّاف الأعلام
- كشّاف الأماكن
- كشّاف الأقوام والقبائل والمبلل والنحل
- كشّاف المصطلحات
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>رقم الصفحة</th>
<th>رقم السورة والآية</th>
<th>الآية</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>101</td>
<td>(2: 80)</td>
<td>وَقَالُوا لَن نَّمَسْنَا النَّارَ إِلَّا أَيَامًا مَعندُودَةً فَلْانْتَخِذْنِمْ عِنْدَ اللَّهِ عَهْدًا فَلْيُخْلِفَ اللَّهُ عَهْدَهُ مُن تُقُولُنَّ عَلَى اللَّهِ مَا لَأَتَعْلَمَنَّ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>99</td>
<td>(2: 81)</td>
<td>فَأُولَئِكَ أَصحَّابُ النَّارِ هُمِّ فِيهَا خَالِدُونَ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100، 99</td>
<td>(2: 81)</td>
<td>فَبُلي مِن كَسْبٍ سَيِّئٍ وَأَحاَطَتْ بِهِ حَطِيثَةٌ فَأُولَئِكَ أَصحَّابُ النَّارِ هُمِّ فِيهَا خَالِدُونَ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>114</td>
<td>(2: 124)</td>
<td>... إِنَّ تُولِّوا فَإِنَّمَا هُمُ فِي شَقٍّ فِسْبِكُفِيكُمُ اللَّهُ وَهُوَ النَّبِيعُ الْعَلِيمُ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>61</td>
<td>(2: 137)</td>
<td>كَمَا أَرَسَّلْنَا فِيكمُ رَسُولًا مُتَّقٍ عَلَيْكُمْ آيَاتًا وَيَرِي كُلُّ جَمِيعِ الْكِتَابِ وَالْحَكْمَةَ وَيَعْلَمُكُمْ مَا لَنْ أَنْتَمُونَ مَعْلُومًا.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>104</td>
<td>(2: 151)</td>
<td>... إِنْ تُنَذَّرُونَ بِالطَّاغُوتِ وَيُؤَذَّنُونَ بِاللَّهِ فَقَدْ أَسْتَنْسَكُمْ بِالْعُرْوَةِ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>46</td>
<td>(2: 166)</td>
<td>... إنَّ الَّذِينَ أَتَبَعُوا مِنَ الْذِّينَ أَتَبَعُوا.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>101</td>
<td>(2: 170)</td>
<td>... وَإِذَا قَدْ أَتَلَّمَنَّهُمُ اللَّهُ أَنْ تَتَّقُوا مِنْ نَذْرِهِمْ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>102</td>
<td>(2: 256)</td>
<td>... فَمَنْ يَكْفُرُ بِالطَّاغُوتِ وَيَؤَذَّنُ بِاللَّهِ فَقَدْ أَسْتَنْسَكُمْ بِالْعُرْوَةِ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>115</td>
<td>(3: 7)</td>
<td>هُوَ الَّذِي أَرَسَّلَ عَلَيْكُمْ الْكِتَابَ وَتَبَيَّنَهُ مَعْمَالَتَهُمْ هُنَّ مَعْمَالٌ أَنْ تُقُولُنَّ عَلَى اللَّهِ مَا لَأَتَعْلَمُنَّ.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>57</td>
<td>(3: 28)</td>
<td>... إِلاَّ أنْ تَنْفِقُوا مِنْهُمْ قَلَطًا.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32</td>
<td>(3: 86-89)</td>
<td>كَيْفَ يَهْدِي اللَّهُ مَنْ يَشَاءُ مِنْ أَحَدِهِمْ وَشَهِيَّدُوا أنَّ الرَّسُولَ حَقًّا وَجَاهَدَهُمْ الْبَيِّنَاتُ وَلَهُّ لَا يَهْدِي الْقَوْمَ.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
الظالمين، أولئك جزاؤهم أن عليهم لنعمة الله والملائكة وسائر الناس检察官 من هؤلاء لا يخفف عنهم عذاب ولا هم ينظر في إلا الذين تأوا من بعده ذلـك وأصلحتوا.

ومن تين بالدين دينًا فلن يقبل منه وهو في الآخرة من النحاسين.

إنا الثواب على الله للذين يعملون السوء بحناية نعمتهم يتورون من قريب فأولئك ينوب الله عليهم وكان الله عليم حكيم.

وليسا الثواب لِلذين يعملون السيئات حتى إذا حضر أحدهم الموت قال أي بيت الآن ولا الذين يمرون وهم كفار أولئك اعتدوا فلم تعذاب أليمًا.

إذا أسلموا فقد اهتدوا...

وأنفس الذين يشوهون الشهودات أن تميلوا ميلًا غليمة.

بأ أنبيها الذين آمنوا لا تأكلوا أمثالكم بني إسرائيل إلا أن تكون مجازة عن تراض مينكم ولا تقتلوا أشياءكم إن الله كان بكريم مرحبا ومن يفعل ذلك عدوانا وظلمًا فسوى قلبه كأب ونذك على الله يسير.

أتي بها الذين آمنوا أطيعوا الله وأطيعوا الرسول وأولي الأمر مكتملين...

ليشيئ خيالك في شيء فردوه إلى الله والرسول إن كنتم تؤمنون بالله وأنتم الآخرين ذلك خير وأحسن تأويلًا.

فمن يقتل مؤمنًا مأمونًا فحزاه جهنم حالدا فيها وعصب الله عليه ولنعني وأعد له غداً غليمة.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>رقم الصفحة</th>
<th>رقم السورة والآية</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>109</td>
<td>115:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>98494</td>
<td>116:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
<td>137:4-146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>58</td>
<td>144:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>108</td>
<td>153:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>53</td>
<td>2:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>90</td>
<td>17:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>94</td>
<td>18:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>94</td>
<td>18:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>98</td>
<td>18:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>95</td>
<td>27:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>105</td>
<td>153:6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

> ومن يشاق الرَّسُولَ مَا تَبْيَّنَ لَهُ الْهُدَى وَيَتَّبِعَ غَيْرَ سَبِيلِ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ

> إنَّ اللَّهَ لاَ يَغْفِرُ أَنْ يُشَاءُ يَعْقِلْ مَا نَعْمَلُ، وَيَغْفِرُ مَا دُونَ ذَلِكَ لِمَنْ يَضْنَى وَمَنْ يَتَّبِعَ مَا نَعْمَلُ بَالْحَقِّ قَدْ ضَلَّ صَالَةً

> إنَّ الَّذِينَ أَمْتَوا مَا كَفَرُوا مَا أَمِنُوا مَا كَفَرُوا مَا أَمَنُوا فَكَذَّبُوا لَهُمَا وَلَا يَعْمَلُوهَا سَبِيلَا

> أنَّ الَّذِينَ أَمْتَوا مَا كَفَرُوا مَا أَمِنُوا مَا كَفَرُوا مَا أَمَنُوا فَكَذَّبُوا لَهُمَا وَلَا يَعْمَلُوهَا سَبِيلَا... إنَّ الْمُنَافِقِينَ في الدَّرَكِ الأَسْفَلِ مِنْ النَّارِ وَلَنْ تَجِدَ لَهُمْ نَصِيرًا...

> لاَ تَتَّخِذُوا الْكَافِرِي َ أَوْلِياءَ مِنْ دُونِ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ أَلَئِنْ تَعْمَلُوْا مَعَهُمَا قَالَ إِنَّمَا يَتَقَبَّلُ اللَّهُ مِنَّهُمَا قَرَّابَا قُرْنًا فَتُقُبِّلَ مَنْ يَشَاءُ مَنْ يَشَاءُ وَلَمن يُتَقَبَّلُ مَنْ آخَرَ قَنَالَ... في يَتَابَعُونَهُمَا وَلَهُمَا قَالَ إِنَّمَا يَتَقَبَّلُ اللَّهُ مِنْهُمَا...
۹۶ (١٥٨ : ٦) 

هل ينظرون إلا أن تأتيهم الملائكة أو يأتي رجل أو يأتي بعض آيات ربكم يوم يأتي بعض آيات ربكم لا ينفع نفسًا إلا أن تأتيهم ثم تكمن أمئت من قلب أو كسبت في إيمانها خيّرًا...

۹۷ (١٤٨ : ٤) 

ولاقد جئواكم ككتاب فصلى على علم هدى ورحمة...

۶۴ (٣ : ۲-٣) 

فسبحوا في الأرض أربعة أشهر وأعلموا أنكم غير معجزة الله وأن الله معجزة الكافرين وأذان من الله ورسوله إلى الناس يوم الحج الأكبر أن الله بريء من المشركين ورسوله فإن تبسم فعله خير لكم وإن تزورتم فاعلموا أنكم غير معجزة الله وبشر الذين كفروا بعذاب أليم...

۳۶ (٩ : ٥-٣) 

وأذان من الله ورسوله إلى الناس يوم الحج الأكبر أن الله بريء من المشركين ورسوله فإن تبسم فعله خير لكم وإن تزورتم فأن تابوا وأقاموا الصلاة وآتوا الزكاة فخلوا سبيلهم...

۶۱ (٩ : ٢٩) 

حتى يعطوا الحزينة عن بئر هعم صاغرون...

۱۰۱-۹۹ (٦٨ : ۶٨) 

وعبد الله المنافقين والمنافقات والكفار نار جهنم خالدين فيها هي حسبهم وليفه لهم الله ولهم غرابة مقيم...

۶۳ (٩ : ٧٧) 

فاعلموا نفاقًا في قلوبهم إلى يوم يلقوه بما أخلفوا الله ما وعدو وليما كانوا يكفرون...

۱۰۵ (٣ : ٣٢) 

فماذا بعد الحق إلا الضلال فأتى تصرعون...

۹۷ (١٤٨ : ١-١٠) 

ذلك يوم مجمع له الناس وذلك يوم مشهود وما تؤصره إلا لأجل عذاب...

۹۷ (١٠٥ : ١١) 

لا تكلم نفس إلا بإذنهم شقي وسعيد...
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>رقم الصفحة</th>
<th>رقم السورة والآية</th>
<th>الآية</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>11:6-107</td>
<td>(99-97)</td>
<td><em>فَأَمَّا الَّذييَ شَقُوا فِي النَّارِ لَهُمُ فِيهَا زَفِيرٌ وَشَهِيقٌ</em> (خالدين) فيها ما دَامَت السَّمَاوَاتُ والأَرْضُ إِلاَّ ما شَاءَ رَبِّكَ...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:6-107</td>
<td>(99-97)</td>
<td><em>وَخَاليدىي فييهَا مَا دَامَت السَّمَاوَاتُ وَالأَرنضُ إِلاَّ مَا شَاءَ رَبُّكَ</em> (ولَا تَركُوا إلى الَّذين ظَلَمُوا فَتَمَسَّكُمُ النَّارُ وَمَا لَكُمُ مِنَ الدَّعَاءَ).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:11-112</td>
<td>(93-108)</td>
<td><em>وَلاَ تَرنكَنُوا إِلَى الَّذييَ ظَلَمُوا فَتَمَسَّكُمُ النَّارُ وَما لَكُمُ مِن نَفْتَى إِلاَّ ما رَحَيمَ رَبِّي إِنَّ رَبِّي غَفُورٌ رَحيمٌ</em> (وَرَفَعَ أَبَوَينهي عَلَى الْعَرنشِ).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:100</td>
<td>(93)</td>
<td><em>مَن كَفَرَ بِاللَّهي مِن بَعندي إِيمَانِهي إِلاَّ مَنَ أَكْرِهَ وَقَلْبُهُ مُطْمَئنٌّ بِالإِيمَانِي وَلَكي ن مَن شَرََ بِالْكُفْرِ صَدَّنرًا فَعَلَينهِ من غَضَبٍ اللَّهِ وَلَهُ من عَذَااٌ عَظييمٌ</em> (وَإِنِّي لَغَفَّارٌ لِيِ اتَّقَوَا لَنُنَجِّي الَّذييَ اتَّقَ وَنَذَرُ الظَّالِمِييَنَ فييهَا جِثييًّا).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:106-110</td>
<td>(36)</td>
<td><em>دُون الله من أولياءَ ثم لا تَصرَوْن</em> (وَلا تَطِعُن مَن أَغْفَلْنَا قَلْبَهُ عَ ن ذيكرِنَا وَاتَّبَعَ هَوَاهُ وَكَانَ أَمنرُهُ فُرُط ا).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:108</td>
<td>(57)</td>
<td><em>أَمَرَهُ فُرَاطُ</em> (إن هَذَ أَمَتُكُنُ فَعَلَيْكُمُ وَأَنَا رَبُّكُمُ فاعِبُوْن).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:71-19:72</td>
<td>(99)</td>
<td><em>وَإِنَّ رَبُّكَ لَيَهْدِي الَّذين آتَوْا وَنَذَرُ الظَّالِمِييَنَ فييهَا حِييًا</em> (وَإِنْ مِن كانُون إِلاَّ وَارِدُهَا كَانَ عَلَى رَبِّكَ حَتنمًا مَقْضيًّا).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:20-20:82</td>
<td>(94)</td>
<td><em>وَإِنَّ كُفَّارَ اتَّقُوا وَأَصْلُحُوا فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ غَفُورٌ رَحيمٌ</em> (وَإِنِّي لَغَفَّارٌ لِيِ اتَّقَوَا وَأَصْلُحُوا فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ غَفُورٌ رَحيمٌ).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:24</td>
<td>(35)</td>
<td><em>وَالَّذين يَرْمَوْنَ المُحَصَّنَاتِ ثُمَّ لَمْ يَأْتُوا بِأَرْبَعَةٍ شِهَادَةَ فَأَجْلَدُونَهُمْ ثَمَانِينَ جَلْدَةً وَلَا تَقْبَلُوا لَهُمْ مَتَّى شَهَادَةً أَبَدًا وَأُولَئكَ هُمُ الفَاسِقُونَ إِلاَّ الَّذين تَابُوا مِن بَعْدَ ذَٰلِكَ وَأَصَلُحُوا فإنَّ اللَّهَ غَفُورٌ رَحيمٌ</em> (وَإِنَّ هَذَ أَمَتُكُنُ فَعَلَيْكُمُ وَأَنَا رَبُّكُمُ فاعِبُوْن).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>رقم الصفحة</td>
<td>رقم السورة والآية</td>
<td>الآية</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34</td>
<td>(24:11-21)</td>
<td>إنّ الذين جاءوا بالأكثف عُصبةً منكم لا تحسبوا شُرًا لكم بل هو خير لكم لكل أمرٍ منكم ما اكتسب من الإثم والذي تولى كبره منهم له عذاب عظيم وَلَوْلَا فضل الله عليكم ورحمةه ما ركز منكم من أحد أبداً ولكن الله يركزي من نشاء والله سميع عليم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>(24:22)</td>
<td>ولا يأكل أولوا الفضل منكم والسعة أن يؤمنوا أولي الفقير والمساكين والمهاجرين في سبيل الله وليعفوا ويصفحوا ألا تجلون أن يعفوك الله لكم والله غفور</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>(24:23)</td>
<td>إنّ الذين يرون المحصنات الغافلات المؤمنات لعنوا في الدنيا والآخرة ولهم عذاب عظيم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
<td>(24:51-48)</td>
<td>وإذا دعووا إلى الله ورسوله ليحكم بينهم إذا فريق منهم معرضون وإن يكن لهما الحق يأتيه مدعون أي بي قلوبهم مرض أم أرتابوا أم يخفون أن يحيه الله عليهم ورسوله بل أوليكم هم الطالبون إمّا كان قول المؤمنين إذا دعووا إلى الله ورسوله ليحكم بينهم أن يقولوا سبعنا وأطعنا أوليكم هم المُخلِّصون</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112</td>
<td>(27:23)</td>
<td>وأوتيت من كل شيء ولها عرش عظيم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>99</td>
<td>(28:23)</td>
<td>ولما ورد ماء مدين وحذّ على أحد الناس يستفوون...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37</td>
<td>(28:50)</td>
<td>ومن أصل ممٍّ اتبع هواه يغُيظ هُدْيَدَ من الله إن الله لا يهدى القوم ظالمين</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>94</td>
<td>(35:8)</td>
<td>أفنينزي لَله سوء عمله فَرَأَه حسنًا فإن الله يطيِّب مَنْ نشاء ويهدي من نشاء فلا تذهب نفسك عليهم حسّارات إن الله عليكم بما يصمتون</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>رقم الصفحة</td>
<td>رقم السورة والآية</td>
<td>الآية</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>103</td>
<td>36:35</td>
<td>«وَالذِّينَ كَفَّارَوا لِلَّهِ نَارَ جَهَنَّمَ لَا يُفْضَّلُونَ عَلَيْهِم مَا فِي مَوْرِضٍ وَلَا يُحِفَّظُ عَلَيْهِم مِّن عَذَابِهَا كَذَٰلِكَ نَحْرُي كَفُورٍ»</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>93</td>
<td>29:38</td>
<td>«قَبْتُ أَنْزَلْتُ إِلَيْكَ مَبَارَكًا لِيَدَّبْرُوا آبَيْهِ وَتَبَذَّكُرُوا أَوْلُوا»</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112</td>
<td>58:40</td>
<td>«وَمَا يُسْتوُى الأَمَّةِ إِلَّا الشَّرِّي، وَالذِّينَ آمَنُوا وَعَمِلُوا الْصَّالِحَاتِ وَاللَّهُ مُبَارَكٌ مَّلَكُ الْعَالَمِينَ»</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>105</td>
<td>13:42</td>
<td>«قَرَعَ كُلُّ مُنَأَّمٍ وَالْبَصِيرَ وَالَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا لَهُمْ نَارُ جَهَنَّمَ لاَ يُقْضَى عَلَيْهِم مَّن فَيَمُوتُوْنَ وَلَا يُخَفَّفُ عَنْهُم مِّن عَذَابِهَا كَذَٰلِكَ نَجَنُّهُم كُلَّ كَفُورٍ»</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>94</td>
<td>23:45</td>
<td>«هَكَامَا تَأْتَ السَّحْرُ إِلَى الْأُجُوْنِ إِنْ نَجَنُنَّكُم مِّن هَٰذِهِ السَّعْيِ وَخَتَمَ عَلَى سَمٌّكُمْ وَأَحْيَى وَأَخْرَجَ مِنْ بُطُونٍ فَمَنْ يَذْكُرُ أَيَّامُهُ»</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112</td>
<td>25:6</td>
<td>«أَنْذَمُكُمُ كَلِمَةً بَأَمَرِ رَبِّكُمْ...»</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>111</td>
<td>18:48</td>
<td>«فَقِدَ رَضى اللَّهُ عَنِ الصَّالِحِينَ إِذْ لَمْ يَاوْعَذْنَكُنَّ بَحْتَ السَّحْرِ»</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100</td>
<td>27:48</td>
<td>«لَتَدْخُلُنَّ الْمَسْجِدَ الْحَرَامَ إِنْ شَاءَ اللَّهُ نَمَّنِينَ مُحَلِّقِينَ رُؤُوسَكُمَّ وَمُقَصِّرِينَ»</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>59</td>
<td>9:49</td>
<td>«وَإِنْ طَافُتُنَّ مِنَ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ اقْتُلُوا فَأْصِلَحُوا بِنِسَاءٍ فَإِنَّ الْمُؤْمِنَاتِ يَجِرْنَ أَن يُنصَبُنَّ الْأَذْهَابَ عَلَى الأُخْرَى فَقَوْنَ تَبَيَّنَ كَيْبُتُكُمْ حَتَّى تَقَبَّلُوا هَذَا إِلَى أَمَّرِ اللَّهِ فَإِنَّ فَاعِلَةً فَأُصِلَّحْ يُصِبِّرُنَا بِنِسَاءٍ»</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112</td>
<td>14:49</td>
<td>«قَالَ الْأَحْزَابُ أَمَّنَا أَفْتَمَنُوا وَلَكُمْ قُولُوا أَسْلَمْنَا وَلَّمَّا يَدْخِلُ الْإِيمَانُ فِي قُلُوبِكُمْ»</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>103</td>
<td>11:59</td>
<td>«فَأَمَّنْ تَرَى الْذَّينَ طَفِقُوا يَقُولُونَ لِإِخْوَانِهِمْ اللَّهُمَا كَفَّارٌ مِّنَ الطَّفْقِيْنِ أَفْتَمُنَّهُمْ أَحْزَابًا أَنْ يُقْلُنَّ غَيْرَ مَعَكُمْ وَلَا تَطَّبِعِ مِنْ فِسَاطٍ أَحَدًا أَبَدًا وَإِنْ قُوِّيتُمْ لَتَصَرَّفُوا مَعَ اللَّهِ يَشْهَدُ إِلَيْهِمْ لِكَافِذَيْنَ»</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>رقم الصفحة</td>
<td>رقم السورة والآية</td>
<td>الآية</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------</td>
<td>----------------</td>
<td>-------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>93</td>
<td>17:20</td>
<td>﴿اعلموا أنّمَا الْحَيَاةُ الدُّنْيَا لَعِبٌ وَلَهِوٌ وَزِينَةٌ وَتَفَاخرٌ بِتَبَكِيرٍ ﴾</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>102</td>
<td>60:4</td>
<td>﴿إِنَّا بُرَنَءُ مِنْكُمْ وَمِمَّا تَعْبِدُونَ مِنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ كَفَرْنا ﴾</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>104</td>
<td>60:13</td>
<td>﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا لَا تُتَوَلَّوا قَوْمًا غَضِبَ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِمْ ﴾</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>111</td>
<td>3:36-37</td>
<td>﴿أَفْغَفِلَ المُسْلِمِينَ كَالْمُجَرَّمِينَ ﴾</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>111</td>
<td>76:21</td>
<td>﴿وَلَا تَطُعُّ مِنْهُمْ أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا ﴾</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## كشّاف الأحاديث والآثار

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>رقم الصفحة</th>
<th>الحديث</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>108</td>
<td>رُدَّوا عليّ العباس أبي</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>114</td>
<td>لا تطيعوا من أمركم معصية الله خالفكم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>95</td>
<td>هلك المصرون قدماً إلى النار</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

## كشّاف القواعد الفقهية

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>رقم الصفحة</th>
<th>القاعدة</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>111</td>
<td>الخصوص يُعترض على العموم ولا يُعترض بالعموم على الخصوص</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>111</td>
<td>اللفظ قد يكون خاصًا ويرد في الظاهر عامًا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>46</td>
<td>إنّ مَن مات فقد ماتت حجته</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>الصفحة</td>
<td>القافية</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>113</td>
<td>مهتدي</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>113</td>
<td>ظاهر اليد</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>113</td>
<td>إلى الغد</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>113</td>
<td>ويبعدي؟</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112</td>
<td>كالدرهم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>114</td>
<td>غدً عامً</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
كشف الأعلام

إبراهيم (س): 102، 101، 114
ابن محمد بن بروزان = أبو عبدالله: 92
ابن مريج = أبو العباس: 92
أبو الشعثاء = جابر بن زيد: 96
أبو العباس بن مريج: 92
أبو عبد الرحمن جعفر: 32
أبو عبيد الله: 32
أبو عبيد: 32
أبو يزيد: 32
آدم (س): 96
بلقيس: 112
جابر بن زيد = أبو الشعثاء: 96
جعفر = أبو عبد الرحمن: 96
الجملدي بن مسعود: 47
الحارث بن سويد: 33
حسان بن ثابت الأنصاري: 35
الحسن بن أبي الحسن البصري: 96
جنحة بنت جحش: 35
راشد بن سعيد: 18، 24، 92
الربيع بن حبيب: 47
سلمان (س): 112

صالح أبو نصر: 32
صفوان: 34
طرفة البكري: 113
عائشة: 34، 36
عبد الله بن مسعود: 47
عزان بن الصفر: 49
علي بن أبي طالب: 49
عمر بن الخطاب: 47
عمرو بن العاص: 47، 49
عنترة بن شداد العبسي: 112
محيوب بن الرحيل: 47
محمد: 34، 36، 49، 50، 55، 94، 116
محمد بن محيوب: 47
مسطح: 35
مسلم: 25
معاوية بن أبي سفيان: 47
الجندلية بن مسعود: 47
الحارث بن سويد: 33
حسان بن ثابت الأنصاري: 35
الحسن بن أبي الحسن البصري: 96
جنحة بنت جحش: 35
راشد بن سعيد: 18، 24، 92
الربيع بن حبيب: 47
سلمان (س): 112
**كَشَاف الأَماكِن**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>المَسْجِد الحَرَام</th>
<th>عَمان: 17، 19، 49، 51 أَهْل الطَّاعَة: 38، 53، 58</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>بِيْت الله الحَرَام</td>
<td>العراق: 19، 49، 106 أَهْل الّوَاحِدِ التَّوحِيد: 17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بَيْت الحَنِيرَم</td>
<td>أَهْل الْإِناصَارِ: 91، 97، 99، 102</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**كَشَاف الأَقوام وَالْقَبَائِلِ وَالْمِللِّ وَالْمَلِّّحِل**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>أَهْل البَيْغِ</th>
<th>أَهْل الطَّاعَة: 99، 109، 181، 184، 187، 199، 201</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>أَهْل الْعَدْلِ</td>
<td>أَهْل الْعَدْلِ: 17، 63، 93، 107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أَهْل المَلْلِّ</td>
<td>أَهْل المَلْلِّ: 109، 111، 133، 135، 137، 139، 141، 143، 145، 147، 149، 151، 153، 155، 157، 159، 161، 163، 165، 167، 169، 171، 173، 175، 177، 179، 181، 183، 185، 187، 189، 191، 193، 195، 197， 199، 201، 203، 205، 207، 209، 211، 213، 215， 217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>المتّقون: 16، 54، 91، 111</td>
<td>النصارى: 10، 61، 63، 96، 98</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
كتشاف المصطلحات

- الاستغفار: 77، 94، 96
- الإسلام: 32، 94، 72
- الإصرار: 49
- الإقرار: 79، 75، 12، 49
- الإيمان: 22، 21، 94، 70، 79، 75
- البراءة: 91، 94، 72
- البعثة: 49، 4، 64
- البعثة: 60، 602
- الديانة: 77
- الدعوة: 95، 72
- الدين: 609، 601
- التدبر: 666
- الدعوة: 48، 49، 64
- التصفيق: 57
- التوبة: 60، 602
- الجو: 79
- الحجة: 49، 54
- الحج: 10
- الحضارة: 77
- المحاربة: 75
- المشرك: 44
- المشرّع: 99، 103
- المئات: 49
- الممن: 103، 111، 110
- النسخ: 100
- النفق: 46
- الوعيد: 64
- الموهوب: 99
- الوصاية: 49، 08، 054، 050
- الفدية: 16
- الفسق: 71
- الكفر: 21
- كفر شرك: 103
- كفر بالأعمال: 63
- الرؤية: 54
- الرواة: 77
- السجدة: 9
- السعادة: 32، 34
- السلم: 58
- الشرك: 32، 34، 057، 99
- السباق: 103
إباضة الشرف بالإخوان بني هشام
وترك واسعاً الوساطى للهند
في العصر الإلخامي الأول

عبد الرحمن السالمي

بيروت 1437 هـ - 2016 م

توزيع
دار الباري
الأشكال الإسلامية

أصبحت هالات موت ريتور

يُصَدِّرُها

المعهد الألماني للأبحاث الشرقية في بيروت

51
إباضة الشرق والغرب وأفكارهم بين التمتع ولفترك واسبا الفيزياء الهندية في العصر الإسلامي الألف